

## Concept and Reality

In this book, the Venerable Author, formerly an Assistant Lecturer in Pali at the University of Sri Lanka, Peradeniya, drawing from his broad knowledge of the Buddha's teachings, sheds new light on a perennial problem of philosophy, indicated in the title, **Concept and Reality**. This work deals primarily with two important, but controversial doctrinal terms, found in the Pali Canon - *Papañca* and *Papañca- saññā-saṅkhā*. The characteristically Buddhist doctrine of 'not-self' (*anattā*) is shown in new dimensions of significance having far-reaching implications not only in the context of Buddhism but also for the student of philosophy, psychology and ethics, as well. The observations on **concept** and **conceptualising** find special import in the context of modern semantic philosophy. Copious quotations from the Buddhist texts provide increased knowledge and new interpretations of obscure passages, and also render the work a substantial source book for Buddhist Philosophy.

Dharma Grantha Mudrana Bharaya.

Colombo,

Sri Lanka.

CONCEPT AND REALITY in Early Buddhist Thought

Bhikkhu Kaṭukurunde Nāṇananda

Quality Printers-0114 870 333

# Concept and Reality in Early Buddhist Thought

Bhikkhu Kaṭukurunde Nāṇananda

# CONCEPT AND REALITY

in

Early Buddhist Thought

*An Essay on Papañca and  
Papañca-Saññā-Saṅkhā*

**BHIKKHU KAṬUKURUNDE ÑĀṄANANDA**

# CONCEPT AND REALITY

in

Early Buddhist Thought

*An Essay on Papañca and  
Papañca-Saññā-Saṅkhā*

by **Bhikkhu Kaṭukurunde Ñāṇananda**

Originally published by the Buddhist Publication Society,  
Kandy, in 1971

The present revised edition by the D.G.M.B.  
is strictly for free distribution,  
as a gift of Dhamma.

Available for free download at: [www.seeingthroughthenet.net](http://www.seeingthroughthenet.net)

ISBN 955-24-0136-4

Published by  
Dharma Grantha Mudrana Bhāraya  
Sri Lanka  
2012

**Dhamma is Priceless!**  
**Strictly for free distribution**

First Impression - 2012

**From the D.G.M.B. . . . .**

We wish to acknowledge the generous support received from our readers and benefactors who continue to pool in their resources into this 'Ford-of-Nectar'. Convinced of the Buddha's words that the gift of Dhamma is far superior to a gift of material things, some of them even take this opportunity to transfer merit to their departed relatives as a mark of gratitude.

May the merit of this Dhammadāna conduce to their attainment of the supreme Bliss of Nibbāna!

**Copies of this book may be obtained from:**

1. Pothgulgala Aranyaya  
'Pahan Kanuwa', Kandedgara, Devalegama.
2. Royal Institute  
191, Havelock Road, Colombo 05.
3. Mr. D. T. Weragala  
422, Welipara, Thalawatugoda.
4. Mr. Anura Rupasinghe  
No. 27, Colombo Street, Kandy.
5. Mrs. Hema Rupasinghe  
No. 26, Havelock Road, Galle.
6. Mr. S.A. Lionel,  
140/19, Ruhunusiri Udyanaya, Hakmana Road, Matara.
7. Ayur. Dr. P. Weerasinghe  
Bandara Bulankulama, Lankarama Road, Anuradhapura.
8. Mr. M.G. Hemachandra  
17/3, Onegama, Polonnaruwa.
9. Mr. H.P.M.M. Keerthikumara  
Delana, Kuliyaipitiya.
10. The Department of Public Trustee  
No. 02, Bullers Road, Colombo 07.

*Printed by*

**The Quality Printers.**

17/2, Pangiriwatta Road, Gangodawila, Nugegoda. Tel : 011-4870333



## Introduction

'Concept and Reality' came out as my first book in 1971, published by the Buddhist Publication Society, Kandy. As indicated in my Preface to the First Edition, the work had its origin in the academic atmosphere of a University but took its final shape in the sylvan solitude of a Hermitage. Though it has gone through several reprints unrevised, I take this opportunity to bring out a revised edition, as the D.G.M.B. is now prepared to include it among its 'pure-Dhammadāna' publications.

I was thirty when I wrote the book. Forty eventful years have passed during the course of which I have dealt in detail elsewhere on many of the salient points discussed in this book. However, I do not wish to expand the present edition by incorporating all that material, as it might confuse the readers already familiar with the original edition. Instead, I shall limit myself to a few alterations and corrections of misprints.

The title 'Concept and Reality' might be a poser to those acquainted with Western philosophy. It must be emphasized that this work does not subscribe to the dichotomy between concept and reality as envisaged by modern philosophers. The Buddha's Middle Path steers clear of such extreme notions in its recognition of the Relative Validity and the Pragmatic Value of concepts. The world has yet to learn from the chimerical pursuit of 'Reality' by modern philosophers and nuclear physicists alike. In this respect, 'Concept and Reality' is more relevant to the times today, than when it was written forty years ago.

In this hectic electronic age, very few care to 'venture' beyond 'ads' and key-words. I do not propose to 'up-date' this work to suit the tastes of this age of 'haste and waste'. Let genuine interest be the 'mouse' and radical attention the 'cursor' for the readers of this volume. Let them traverse the dark corridors of ignorance with the lamp of Wisdom in their quest for 'Reality'.

I feel morally obliged to grant permission to the Buddhist Publication Society to continue publishing this work and four of my other books<sup>1</sup> which they have been publishing for decades. Although the B.P.S. is not prepared to toe our pure-Dhammadāna line, I do hope and trust that it will in future make available these five books to their readers at least at a much reduced price in deference to our pure-Dhammadāna ideal.

**Bhikkhu Kaṭukurunde Ñāṇananda**

Pothgulgala Āranyaya

'Pahan Kanuwa'

Kandededara

Devalegama

25-05-2011

---

<sup>1</sup> 1. The Magic of the Mind  
2. Saṅyutta Nikāya – An anthology – Part II (Wh. No. 183 – 185)  
3. Ideal Solitude – (Wh. No. 188)  
4. Uttareetara Hudakalawa – Damsak No. 172/173.  
5. Nibbāna The Mind Stilled

## Preface to First Edition (by the B.P.S.)

The analysis of the nature of concepts constitutes an important facet of the Buddhist doctrine of *Anattā* ('not-self'). Buddhism traces the idea of a soul to a fundamental error in understanding the facts of experience. This ignorance (*avijjā*) is reflected to a great extent in the words and concepts in worldly parlance. Being unaware of their limitations, man is generally prone to cling to them dogmatically and this accounts for a good deal of complications in his intellectual and emotional life. Hence an understanding of the nature of concepts as such is a preliminary step in the spiritual endeavour in Buddhism. The Buddha's teachings on this particular aspect of our phenomenal existence can best be appreciated with the aid of the two key-words, '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-sankhā*', an evaluation of which is the aim of this work.

'*Papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-sankhā*' comprehend between them a picture of the concept in its dynamic and static aspects, linking up the psycho-ethical foundations of conceptualisation with the symbolical superstructure of language and logic. The imperfections inherent in the subjective aspect of the concept are thereby causally related to the frailties that characterise its objective aspect. Thus in its analysis of the concept, Buddhism does not stop at the linguistic or logical level, but delves deeper into its psychological mainsprings. This affords us an opportunity to reassess some of the basic tenets of Buddhism in the light of '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-sankhā*' which we have here utilised accordingly.

It so happens that '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-sankhā*' are two controversial terms in Buddhist philosophy. The commentarial tradition and modern scholarship have given us a number of interpretations which are more often contradictory than complementary. We have attempted a reappraisal of the whole problem and the resulting conclusions were *not* always in harmony with the traditional or other accepted interpretations. Hence the reader is invited to exercise caution and to judge for himself.

It is feared that the novelty of some of our interpretations will draw two types of extreme reaction. On the one hand, it might give rise to a total antipathy towards the critical analysis of doctrinal points as attempted here. On the other, it might engender an unreasonable distrust leading to a sweeping condemnation of the commentaries as a whole. This work has failed in its purpose if its critical scrutiny of the occasional shortcomings in the commentarial literature makes anyone forget his indebtedness to the commentaries for his knowledge of the Dhamma.

The original essay forming the nucleus of the present work was written some years ago while I was teaching at the University of Ceylon, Peradeniya. When I entered the Order it was yet unpublished, and it would have even continued to remain so, had it not been for the initiative taken by the venerable Nyānaponika Mahāthera. While the manuscript was being prepared for publication, the scope of the essay was considerably widened, enabling it to absorb a good deal of fresh material. So it grew to its present size, in which form the work is here presented as a humble tribute to all my teachers.

**Bhikkhu Ñāṇānanda**

*Island Hermitage,  
Dodanduwa, Sri Lanka July, 1969.*

TYPOGRAPHICAL — As some diacritics were not available, the transliteration of the palatal sibilant could not be regularised. In a few instances, however, 'sh' has been used instead.

## ***Preface to Revised Edition (by the D.G.M.B.)***

I wish to acknowledge the devoted services of Dr. Nawaratne Jayasiri in undertaking the tedious task of resetting the type of the entire work and suggesting improvements. Mr. C. Jayasoma and his staff of The Quality Printers took care of the quality of this Dhamma gift.

**Bhikkhu Kaṭukurunde Ñāṇānanda**  
Pothgulgala Āranyaya  
'Pahan Kanuwa',  
Kandededara,  
Devalegama.  
25-05-2011

## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

### From Views to Vision – A Prologue

The sight-seer sitting on the crag is taking in a view of the landscape around him. His eyes are on the distant hills, dimly visible through the mist. Above him, an overhanging creeper is waving in the morning breeze. His view shifts from the distant scene to the dew-drop at the tip of the creeper. All is quiet and still.

The ruddy dawn breaks in through the mist. A ray of the rising sun alights on the dew drop and the sight-seer adjusts his perspective suitably. The dew-drop gets transformed into a spectrum and a view gets transformed into a vision.

Before the advent of the Buddha, the seers were concentrating on as many as 62 views, but none of them saw the 'sight'. It was just above them – so near and yet so far. They never thought that it could be in the dew-drop of their Name-and-Form, too bland and uninviting to arrest their attention. But once their gaze got fixed on it in the correct perspective to catch the ray of the dawning Buddha Sun, **they saw the 'sight' – a Vision, in contrast to Views.**

- 'From Topsy-turvydom to Wisdom' – p.1

### Pali Texts :

( References are to page numbers in P.T.S. Editions )

D.N	- <i>Dīgha Nikāya</i>
M.N.	- <i>Majjhima Nikāya</i>
S.N.	- <i>Saṃyutta Nikāya</i>
A.N.	- <i>Anguttara Nikāya</i>
Dhp.	- <i>Dhammapada</i>
Ud.	- <i>Udāna</i>
Itiv	- <i>Itivuttaka</i>
Sn	- <i>Sutta Nipāta</i>
Thag	- <i>Theragāthā</i>
Thig	- <i>Therīgāthā</i>
Nid	- <i>Niddesa</i>
Paṭis	- <i>Paṭisambhidāmagga</i>
Netti	- <i>Nettipakarana</i>
Milp	- <i>Milindapañha</i>
Vism	- <i>Visuddhimagga</i>
Kvu	- <i>Kathāvatthu</i>
Pug.P.	- <i>Puggala Paññatti</i>
Vin	- <i>Vinaya</i>
D. A.	- D. N. Commentary ( <i>Sumaṅgalavilāsinī</i> )
M. A.	- M. N. Commentary ( <i>Papañcasūdanī</i> )
S. A.	- S. N. Commentary ( <i>Sāratthappakāsinī</i> )
A. A.	- A. N. Commentary ( <i>Manorathapūranī</i> )
Ud. A.	- Ud. Commentary ( <i>Paramatthadīpanī</i> )
Thag.A.	- Thag. Commentary ( , , )
Smp.	- <i>Samantapāsādikā</i> ( Vin. Commentary )
Vbh. A.	- Vibhaṅga Commentary ( <i>Sammohavinodanī</i> )

## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

### Translations

'Pali Text Society Translation Series' (P.T.S.Tr.)

'Sacred Books of the Buddhists' (S.B.B.)

- D.B. - Dialogues of the Buddha (S.B.B.)  
M.L.S. - Middle Length Sayings (P.T.S.Tr.)  
K.S. - Kindred Sayings (P.T.S.Tr.)  
G.S. - Gradual Sayings (P.T.S.Tr.)  
Bk.ofD. - Book of Discipline (S.B.B.)  
W.C.E.B. - Woven Cadences of Early Buddhists (S.B.B.)  
P.E.B. - Psalms of the Early Buddhists (P.T.S. Tr.)  
M.A.P.C. - Minor Anthologies of the Pali Canon (S.B.B.)

### Sanskrit and Buddhist-Sanskrit Texts

- Brh. - Brhadāraṇyaka Upanisad  
Māṇḍ. - Māṇḍukya Upanisad  
M.K. - Mādhyamika Kārikā  
L.S. - Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra



## PAPAÑCA AND PAPAÑCA-SAÑÑĀ-SAÑKHĀ

### Papañca—a key-word in the Sutta terminology.

The term '*papañca*,' as it occurs in the Pali Canon, has presented considerable difficulty of interpretation. Attempts at its definition by the commentators as well as by the present-day scholars, have given rise to divergent conclusions. It is, however, generally agreed that the determination of its significance is fundamental to a proper understanding of the philosophy of early Buddhism.

In Canonical passages the term appears in a variety of forms and associations, sometimes as a verb or a verbal-derivative (*papañceti*, *papañcayantā*, *papañcita*) and sometimes as part of a compound (*papañca-saññā*, *papañca-saṅkhā*, *papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*, *papañca-saññā-saṅkhā-samudācaraṇa-paññatti*, *papañca-saṅkhā-pahāna*, *papañca-vūpasama*, *papañca-nirodha*, *chinnapapañca*, *papañcārāma*, *papañcarati*). Its antonym too, is seen to occur, even beside it in certain contexts (*nippapañca*, *nippapapañcapada*, *nippapañcapatha*, *nippapañcārāma*, *nippapañcarati*, *appapañcaṇ*). This variety of usage, on the one hand, greatly facilitates our quest for a definition, while on the other, it imposes an exacting test of validity for whatever definition we venture to offer.

If we collate the different contexts in which some reference to '*papañca*' has been made, one of our first impressions would be the prominence it enjoys in a good number of them. When a list of terms relating to a common topic is set out in the *suttas*, one often finds that the most important among them is either placed first, or else, is counted last. Now, the term '*papañca*' is in fact enumerated last in as many as seven such contexts.<sup>1</sup>

If the logic of arrangement alone is deemed insufficient, a deeper analysis of the contexts themselves will provide abundant proof of the

<sup>1</sup> *Sakkapañha Sutta* D. N. II 266f, *Madhupiṇḍika S.* (M.N.I 109ff), *CūlaSihanāda. S.* (M.N.I 65ff), *Kalahavivāda S.* (Sn. 168ff) A. N. 111293, A. N. IV. 229, Ud. 77.

fundamental significance of '*papañca*'. The *Sakkapañha* (D. N.), *Madhupiṇḍika* (M. N.) and *Kalahavivāda* (Sn.) *Suttas*, for instance, trace the manifold conflict both in the individual as well as in the society, to the question of '*papañca*.' It is also significant that at A. N. IV 229, the Buddha himself adds the eighth '*Mahāpurisavitakka*' ('thought of a great man') to Anuruddha's seven, and it concerns '*papañca*.'

"Well done! Well done, Anuruddha! Well have you pondered over the seven thoughts of a great man! That is to say: 'This dhamma is for one who wants little, not for one who wants much; for the contented, not for the discontented; for the secluded, not for one who is fond of society; for the energetic, not for the lazy; for one who has set up mindfulness, not for the laggard therein; for the composed, not for the flustered; for the wise, not for the unwise. But, Anuruddha, do you also ponder over this eighth thought of a great man, to wit: "This dhamma is for one who likes and delights in '*nippapañca*', not for one who likes and delights in '*papañca*' '*nippapañcārāmassāyaṃ dhammo nippapañcaratino nāyaṃ dhammo papañcārāmassa papañcaratino*)." G. S., IV 155.

The above series of eight '*Mahāpurisavitakkas*' seem to follow an ascending order in point of importance. This fact, coupled with the reference to '*Papañca*' in the concluding stanzas of the *sutta*, provides a sure index to the high degree of importance attached to this particular term. Hence the nature of its significance must now be determined.

### Papañca and Sense–Perception.

The contexts in which the term is located, are on the whole psychological in their import. The *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta* (M. N. 109 ff) points to the fact that '*papañca*' is essentially connected with the process of sense-perception, and so also does the *Kalahavivāda Sutta* (Sn. v. 874) when it emphatically states that

<sup>1</sup> As a tentative measure, we leave the word untranslated. Though we will be depending on the P. T. S. translations to a great extent, we might not be able to cite them verbatim always. However, in spite of alterations, references to standard translations will be given for the reader's convenience.

*`papañca-saṅkhā'* have their origin in sense-perception (*Saññā-nidānā hi papañca-saṅkhā*). The following formula of sense-perception occurring in the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta*, may however be regarded as the '*locus classicus*' as it affords us a clearer insight into the problem of '*papañca*'.

*Cakkhuñcāvuso paṭicca rūpe ca uppajjati cakkhuviññāṇaṃ, tiṇṇaṃ saṅgati phasso, phassapaccayā vedanā, yaṃ vedeti taṃ sañjānāti, yaṃ sañjānati taṃ vitakketi, yaṃ vitakketi, taṃ papañceti, yaṃ papañceti tatonidānaṃ purisaṃ papañcasaññā-saṅkhā samudācaranti atītānāgata-paccuppannesu cakkhuviññeyyesu rūpesu. Sotañcāvuso paṭicca sadde ca....ghānañcāvuso paṭicca gandhe ca .... jivhañcāvuso paṭicca rase ca ...kāyañcāvuso paṭicca phoṭṭhabbe ca ... manañcāvuso paṭicca dhamme ca ... manoviññeyyesu dhammesu.*

(M. NI 111 ff)

"Visual consciousness, brethren, arises because of eye and material shapes; the meeting of the three is sensory impingement; because of sensory impingement arises feeling; what one feels one perceives; what one perceives, one reasons about; what one reasons about, one turns into '*papañca*' (*papañceti*); what one turns into '*papañca*', due to that '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' assail him in regard to material shapes cognisable by the eye belonging to the past, the future and the present. And, brethren, auditory consciousness arises because of ear and sounds; ....., olfactory consciousness arises because of nose and smell; ....., gustatory consciousness arises because of tongue and tastes; ....., bodily consciousness arises because of body and touches; ....., mental consciousness arises because of mind and mental objects; ... .belonging to the past, the future and the present."

(M. L. S. I 145)

This passage indicates that '*papañca*' signifies the final stage in the process of sense-cognition. The term definitely concerns the grosser conceptual aspect of the process, since it is a consequent to '*vitakka*' (reasoning) which presupposes language.<sup>1</sup> Hence we should determine how '*papañca*' differs from — nay, marks a

<sup>1</sup> "Pubbe kho āvuso Visākha vitakketvā vicāretvā pacchā vācaṃ bhindati, tasmā vitakkavicārā vacīsāṅkhārā." *Culla Vedalla S.*, M. N, I 301. "Having first had initial thought and discursive thought, one subsequently utters a speech; therefore initial and discursive thought is activity of speech." M. L. S. I. 363.

development on — '*vitakka*'. The etymology of the word would help us at this point. Being derived from '*pra+ pañc*' it conveys such meanings as 'spreading out', 'expansion', 'diffusion', and manifoldness'. The tendency towards proliferation in the realm of concepts may be described in any one of those terms, and this is probably the primary meaning of '*papañca*'.<sup>1</sup>

Thus, while '*vitakka*' denotes the onset or initial application of thought, '*papañca*' may refer to the consequent prolificity in ideation. One might object, however, that the word '*vicāra*', so often found in the suttas, would have amply conveyed this meaning.<sup>2</sup> It is therefore necessary to distinguish between '*vicāra*' and '*papañca*' as well. '*Vicāra*', though it denotes the discursive aspect of the intellect, has the finer sense of investigation and deliberation. It follows faithfully in the wake of '*vitakka*' and seeks to sustain it. Hence it is that '*vicāra*' hardly occurs by itself and is often found juxtaposed with '*vitakka*,' as '*vitakka-vicāra*.' '*Papañca*' on the other hand, is a more comprehensive term hinting at the tendency of the worldling's imagination to break loose and run riot. If '*vicāra*', at least relatively, denotes cosmos in the mental realm, '*papañca*' seems to signify chaos. This of course does not preclude the possibility that what often passes for '*vicāra*' might turn out to be '*papañca*'. when viewed from a higher stand-point. In any case, the 'expansion' or 'diffusion' of thought as envisaged by '*papañca*'. is one that tends to obscure the true state of affairs inasmuch as it is an unwarranted deviation giving rise to obsession. This particular nuance in the meaning of the term becomes obvious when '*papañca*' is used to denote verbosity or circumlocution. In fact it is probably this latter sense found in common usage, that has assumed a philosophical dimension with its transference from the

<sup>1</sup> cf. (I) '*Vipañcitaññū*' at A. N. II 135.

(II) *Katamo ca puggalo vipañcitaññū? Yassa puggalassa saṅkhittena bhāsitaṃ vitthārena atthe vibhajyamāne dhammābhisamayo hoti. Ayam vuccati puggalo vipañcitaññū*. Pug P, 41.

"What sort of person learns by exposition? The person to whom comprehension of the doctrine comes when the meaning of what is briefly uttered is analysed in detail."

(III) *Vipañcayati, vipañcanā, vipañcitaññū* — Netti. 9.

<sup>2</sup> For a detailed definition of '*vitakka*' and '*vicāra*', see *Paṭhavikasiṇa Niddesa*, Vism. I 142-3.

verbal to the mental sphere. As we have already mentioned, conceptual activity presupposes language, so much so that thought itself may be regarded as a form of sub-vocal speech. The above transference, therefore, is quite appropriate. This tentative definition of '*papañca*' provides the key to the other intriguing term '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*.' In view of the close relationship between '*papañca*' and the linguistic medium, it appears that, '*saṅkhā*' (*saṅ* + *khyā* - 'to call') may be rendered by such terms as concept, reckoning, designation or linguistic convention.<sup>1</sup> Hence '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' can mean concepts, reckonings, designations or linguistic conventions characterised by the prolific conceptualising tendency of the mind.

Equipped with these definitions we may now examine the *Madhupiṇḍika*-formula of sense perception, in detail. It begins on an impersonal note reminiscent of the fact of Dependent Arising (*paṭicca-samuppāda*).

(I) "*Cakkhuñcāvuso paṭicca rūpe ca uppajjati cakkuviññāṇaṃ tiṅṅaṃ saṅgati phasso, phassa paccayā vedanā ...*"

"Because of eye and material objects, O brethren, arises visual consciousness; the meeting of the three is sensory impingement, because of sensory impingement arises feeling ..."

The impersonal note is sustained only up to the point of '*vedanā*'. The formula now takes a personal ending suggestive of deliberate activity.

(II) "*Yaṃ vedeti, taṃ sañjānāti, yaṃ sañjānāti, taṃ vitakketi, yaṃ vitakketi, taṃ papañceti ...*" "What one feels, one perceives; what one perceives, one reasons about; what one reasons about, one proliferates conceptually ....."

---

<sup>1</sup> '*Yaṃ hi bhikkhave rūpaṃ atītaṃ niruddhaṃ vipariṇataṃ ahoṣīti tassa saṅkhā, ahoṣīti tassa samaññā, ahoṣīti tassa paññatti ...*'

S. N. III 71.

"Whatever material form, O monks, that is past, has ceased, has undergone change, its reckoning, its appellation, its designation is: 'has been' ....."

The deliberate activity implied by the third person verb is seen to stop at '*papañceti*'. Now comes the most interesting stage of the process of cognition. Apparently it is no longer a mere contingent process, nor is it an activity deliberately directed, *but an inexorable subjection to an objective order of things. At this final stage of sense-perception, he who has hitherto been the subject, now becomes the hapless object.*

(III) ..... "*Yaṃ papañceti tatonidānaṃ purisaṃ papañcasaññā saṅkhā samudācaranti atītānāgatapaccuppannesu cakkhu-viññeyyesu rūpesu ...*"

..."What one proliferates conceptually, due to that, concepts characterised by the prolific tendency assail him in regard to material shapes cognisable by the eye, belonging to the past, the future and the present ..."

Like the legendary resurrected tiger which devoured the magician who restored it to life out of its skeletal bones, the concepts and linguistic conventions overwhelm the worldling who evolved them.<sup>1</sup> At the final and crucial stage of sense-perception, the concepts are, as it were, invested with an objective character. This phenomenon is brought about mainly by certain peculiarities inherent in the linguistic medium. As a symbolical medium, language has an essential public quality about it. This public quality has necessitated the standardisation of the symbols (words) as well as of the patterns of their arrangement (grammar and logic), and these, therefore enjoy a certain degree of stability. Thus the letter, as the smallest unit of language, was called an '*aksara*' ('stable', 'durable') and language itself was associated with God and eternity by the ancient Indian philosophers. Now, the vague percepts, which are already tainted with a notion of stability owing to the limitations of the sensory apparatus, become fully crystallized into concepts in the realm of ideation. Nouns, abstract nouns, adjectives, verbs and adverbs — in short, the whole repertoire of language, assumes a certain substantial character by virtue of its relative stability. It is probably this particular phenomenon that is hinted at, by such oft-recurring phrases in the suttas as... *...thāmasā parāmassa abhinivissa voharanti* ('...having

---

<sup>1</sup> A somewhat humorous anecdote suggestive of the vicious character of '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' occurs in the *Bhāgiṇeyya-saṃgharakkhitattheravatthu* of the *Dhammapadaṭṭhakathā*.

seized tenaciously and adhering thereto, they declare.....') and 'takkapariyāhata' ('hammered out on the anvil of logic, as it were') cited in connection with dogmatic theories, which themselves are called 'diṭṭhijāla' ('veritable networks of views'). The vicious proliferating tendency of the worldling's consciousness weaves for him a labyrinthine network of concepts connecting the three periods of time through processes of recognition, retrospection and speculation. The tangled maze with its apparent objectivity entices the worldling and ultimately obsesses and overwhelms him. The Buddha has compared the aggregate of consciousness to a conjuror's trick or an illusion (*māyā*)<sup>1</sup> and we may connect it with the above-mentioned image of the resurrected tiger.

It must be confessed at this stage that our interpretation of the *Madhupiṇḍika* formula of sense- perception differs to some extent from that advanced by Buddhaghosa. Besides rendering, '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' as '*papañca-koṭṭhāsā*' ('parts of *papañca*') thereby ignoring its essential connection with language, Buddhaghosa pays little attention to the peculiar syntactical arrangement of the formula.<sup>2</sup> This latter peculiarity will be obvious when one compares the above formula with another occurring in the *Nidāna Saṃyutta* of the *Saṃyutta Nikāya*.

<sup>1</sup> *Pheṇapiṇṇūpamaṃ rūpaṃ - vedanā bubbulūpamā*  
*Marīcikūpamā saññā - saṅ khārā kadalūpamā*  
*Māyūpamañca viññānaṃ - dīpītādiccabandhunā* S. N. III 142

"The Kinsman of the Sun' (the Buddha) has compared corporeality to a mass of foam, feelings to a bubble, perceptions to a mirage, preparations to a plantain-tree, and consciousness to an illusion."

<sup>2</sup> '*Cakkhuñcāvuso ādisu ayamatto: Āvuso nissayabhāvena cakkhuppasādañca ārammaṇabhāvena catusamuṭṭhānikarūpe ca paṭicca cakkhuvīññānaṃ nāma uppajjati. Tiṇṇaṃ saṅgati phasso ti tesam tiṇṇaṃ saṅgatiyā phasso nāma uppajjati. Tam phassaṃ paṭicca saḥajātādivasena phassa paccayā vedanā uppajjati, tāya vedanāya yaṃ ārammaṇaṃ vedeti tadeva saññā sañjānāti, yaṃ saññā sañjānāti tadeva ārammaṇaṃ vitakko vitakketi, yaṃ vitakko vitakketi tadeva ārammaṇaṃ papañco papañceti. Tato nidānanti etehi cakkhurūpādīhi kāraṇehi. Purisaṃ papañcasaññāsaṅkhā samudācarantīti tam apariññātakāraṇaṃ purisaṃ papañcakoṭṭhāsā abbhavanti tassa pavattan tīti attho.'*

*Cakkhuñcāvuso paṭicca rūpe ca uppajjati cakkhuvīññānaṃ tiṇṇaṃ saṅgati phasso phassa paccayā vedanā vedanā paccayā taṇhā taṇhā paccayā upādānaṃ upādāna paccayā bhavo bhava paccayā jāti, jāti paccayā jarāmaraṇaṃ soka paridevadukkhadomanassupāyāsā sambhavanti. Ayam lokassa samudayo'.*

S. N. II 73.

'Because of eye and material objects, brethren, arises visual consciousness; the meeting of the three is sensory impingement, because of sensory impingement arises feeling; because of feeling, craving; because of craving, grasping; because of grasping, becoming; because of becoming birth; and because of birth, decay and death, grief, lamentation, suffering and despair arise. This is the arising of the world.'

In this case the formula of perception is seen to branch off towards the stereotyped formula of *Paṭicca Samuppāda* (Dependent Arising). The aim here is to illustrate the fact of 'Dependent Arising.' The *Madhupiṇḍika* formula on the other hand, has a different purpose, and this we may ascertain from a study of the context. It must be noted that the formula in question is in effect a commentary by *Mahākaccāna* on the following brief discourse by the Buddha.

*'Yatoniādnam bhikkhu purisaṃ papañcasaññāsaṅkhā samuād-caranti, ettha ce natthi abhinanditabbam abhivaditabbam ajjhosetabbam esevanto rāgānusayānaṃ esevanto paṭighānusa-yānaṃ esevanto diṭṭhānusayānaṃ, esevanto vicikicchānusayānaṃ, esevanto mānānusayānaṃ, esevanto bhavarāgānusayānaṃ esevan-*

This is the meaning of the passage beginning with '*cakkhuñcāvuso*': 'Brethren, because of the sensitive surface of the eye as the support and the four originating material elements as the object, there arises 'eye-consciousness'. '*Tiṇṇaṃ saṅgati phasso*': by the meeting of those three arises 'contact'. Because of that contact arises feeling, with contact as its condition by way of co-nascence etc. Whatever object is felt by that feeling, that, 'perception' perceives; whatever perception perceives, 'reasoning' reasons about that very object; whatever reasoning reasons about, '*papañca*' transforms into *papañca* that very object. '*Tatonidānaṃ*': with these factors such as the eye and visible object. '*Purisaṃ papañcasaññāsaṅkhā samudācarantīti*': *Parts of papañca* overwhelm that man who is ignorant of those facts; that is, they exist for him."

to avijjānusayānaṃ esevanto daṇḍādāna - satthādāna - kalaha -  
viggaha - vivāda - tuvantuva - pesuṇṇa - musāvādānaṃ, etthete  
pāpakā akusalā dhammā aparisesā nirujjhantīti.

— M. N. I 109

'If, O monk, one neither delights in nor asserts, nor clings to, that which makes one subject to 'concepts characterised by the prolific tendency', then that itself is the end of the proclivities to attachment, aversion, views, perplexity, pride, ignorance and attachment to becoming. That itself is the end of taking the stick, of taking the weapon, of quarreling, contending, disputing, accusation, slander and lying speech. Here it is that all these evil unskilled states cease without residue.'

On being requested by the monks who were perplexed by this brief discourse, *Mahākaccāna* gives a detailed commentary, and in doing so he pays particular attention to the word '*yatonidānaṃ*' ('owing to which'). Hence the concluding portion of the formula of sense-perception begins with its correlative '*tatonidānaṃ*' ('owing to that'). The formula, therefore, is part of an attempt to illustrate how (lit. 'on account of what') these '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' manage to overwhelm the worldling. Thus our inferences based on the syntax of the formula are not without justification. Indeed, we may add in passing, that this *sutta* which has been so aptly titled '*Madhupiṇṇika*' ('Honey-ball') by the Buddha himself, owing to its immense richness of meaning, has not yet exhausted its flavour at the hands of the commentators.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This said, venerable Ānanda addressed the Exalted One thus: "Lord, as a man overcome by hunger and exhaustion might come upon a honey ball; from each bit that he would taste, he would get a sweet delicious flavour which remains unimpaired—even so, Lord, is a monk who is naturally able in mind from each bit that he would examine with intuitive wisdom as to the meaning of this disquisition on Dhamma, he would get delight, he would get satisfaction for the mind. What is this disquisition on Dhamma called, Lord?"

"Wherefore you, Ānanda, may understand this disquisition on Dhamma as the 'Disquisition of the Honey-ball'."

— M. L. S. 147 - S.

### Triple Proliferation in Thought

In order to locate the deeper psychological mainsprings of '*papañca*' we have to turn our attention to the Buddha's brief discourse set out above. There it is said that if one does not delight in or assert or cling to that which entails subjection to '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' one would be released from all proclivities towards evil mental states. As we have already indicated, '*yatonidānaṃ*' invariably refers to the first part of the formula of sense-perception bounded by its correlative '*tatonidānaṃ*'. What one should neither delight in, nor assert, nor cling to, is this very process of sense perception, which comprehends from the cognitive point of view the totality of the five aggregates themselves.<sup>1</sup> The expressions, 'delighted in,' 'asserting', and 'clinging to', correspond respectively to *taṇhā* (craving), *māna* (conceit) and *ditṭhi* (views), bound up with the notions of 'I' and 'mine.' This marks the intrusion of the ego into the field of sense perception. In fact, from the worldling's point of view, it is no intrusion at all, for the subject-object relationship is regarded by him as of the very essence of cognition. As portrayed by Mahākaccāna's formula, the latent illusion of the ego awakens at the stage of '*vedanā*' and thereafter the vicious duality is maintained until it is fully crystallized and justified at the conceptual level. Thus what has been a complex, conditionally arisen process, tends to be resolved into a direct relationship between the ego and the non-ego. Now this is an oversimplification of facts characteristic of the realm of language as well as of our ways of thought. The label 'I' thus superimposed on the complex contingent process, serves as a convenient fiction of thought or a short-hand device, and is in fact one of the shortest words in many a language. But paradoxically enough, it is the outcome of '*papañca*'—rather a disconcerting predicament. The paradox is resolved by the fact that the ego notion is an extension in thought not faithful to facts, being a mental aberration of the worldling. Here we see a curious

<sup>1</sup> Buddhaghosa, however, concludes that it is the twelve spheres of sense that one should neither delight in, nor assert nor cling to. ('*Ettha ce natthi abhinanditabbanti yasmim dvādasāyatane kāraṇe sati ...*' M. A. II 75). This is because he has interpreted '*Tatonidānaṃ*' to mean only the sense organs and their corresponding objects, by laying excessive emphasis on the word '*paṭicca*' in the formula.

distinction between the relative meanings attached to '*papañca*' when it is used with reference to the verbal and the mental realms respectively. Such short-hand devices as technical terms or codewords in a language help us to avoid '*verbal-papañca*', but inasmuch as they are evolved through a complex process of thought activity they may be said to presuppose a good deal of '*mental - papañca*'.

Given the ego-consciousness, the ever-prolific process of conceptualisation in all its complex ramifications, sets in. From one aspect, the notion 'I' with its concomitant notions of 'my' and 'mine', develops towards craving (*taṇhā*). Viewed from another aspect, as inevitably and inextricably bound up with the notions of 'not-I,' of 'thou' and 'thine', it is a form of measuring or value-judgment (*māna*). Yet another aspect is the dogmatic adherence to the concept of an ego as a theoretical formulation. Thus Craving, Conceit and Views (*taṇhā, māna, diṭṭhi*) are but three aspects of the self-same ego-consciousness, and we find these alluded to in the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta* by the expressions, '*abhinanditabbam*', '*abhivaditabbam*', and '*ajjhosetabbam*', respectively. It is this triune nature of the ego that one often comes across in the Pali Canon as '*mamatta*', '*asmimāna*' and '*sakkāya-diṭṭhi*'. Of similar significance are the three standpoints from which the worldling is said to view each of his Five Aggregates when he thinks of them as 'This is mine' ('*etaṃ mama*'), 'This am I' ('*eso ḥamasmi*'), 'This is my self' ('*eso me attā*'). When we take into account the fact that the process of sense-perception as given in the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta* comprehends the Five Aggregates, the parallelism becomes all the more obvious. Since in Buddhist psychology 'a difference of aspects is a difference in things', the three terms Craving, Conceit and Views are usually distinguished between. Yet as they arise from the self-same matrix of the super-imposed ego, they are not to be considered mutually exclusive. Now the prolificity in concepts suggested by the term '*papañca*' manifests itself through the above three main channels, so much so that the term has been traditionally associated with them. In the *Mahāniddeśa*, (pg. 334) for instance, *taṇhā, māna* and *diṭṭhi* are all defined in terms of '*papañca*'.

*Papañcā yeva papañcasāṅkhā taṇhāpapañcasāṅkhā diṭṭhi-papañcasāṅkhā, mānapapañcasāṅkhā.*

*Papañcas* themselves are '*papañca-sāṅkhās*', to wit: *taṇhā-papañca-sāṅkhā, diṭṭhi-papañca-sāṅkhā, māna-papañca-sāṅkhā.*

Buddhaghosa also often gives a similar definition. At D. A. II 721 he observes:—

*Papañcasaññāsāṅkhāti tayo papañcā - taṇhā papañco, mānapapañco, diṭṭhi papañcoti.*

*Papañcasaññāsāṅkhā* refer to the three *papañcas, taṇhā papañca, māna papañca* and *diṭṭhi papañca*.

At M. A. II 10 we read:

..... *taṇhādiṭṭhimānānam etaṃ adbhivacanam*

'This is a synonym for *taṇhā, diṭṭhi* and *māna*.'

And at A. A. III 151:—

.... *taṇhādiṭṭhimānappabhedassa papañcassa gati.*

'The range of *papañca* comprising its three types. *taṇhā, diṭṭhi* and *māna*.

The last reference in particular, reminds us of the fact that Craving, Conceit and Views (*taṇhā, māna, diṭṭhi*) are so many instances of *papañca*. These are therefore 'definitions in extension', seeking to define '*papañca*' by giving its most notable instances. Thus it seems that the commentarial tradition has rightly recognised the question of aspects referred to above. It has been suggested by E. R. Sarathchandra<sup>1</sup> that *taṇhā* is rather the result of '*papañca*' than '*papañca*' itself. However, as we have shown above, not only *taṇhā*, but *māna* and *diṭṭhi* also are illustrative of '*papañca*' thus disallowing any distinction as to priority. Nevertheless '*papañca*' can be regarded as something fundamental to *taṇhā, māna* and *diṭṭhi* — something that both underlies and comprehends each of them.

The essence of the Buddha's discourse to the monks in the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta* may now be summed up. If one does not entertain Craving, Conceit and Views (*taṇhā, māna, diṭṭhi*) with regard to the conditioned phenomena involved in the process of cognition, by resorting to the fiction of an ego, one is free from the

<sup>1</sup>'Buddhist Psychology of Perception' - p. 5

yoke of proliferating concepts and has thereby eradicated the proclivities to all evil mental states which breed conflict both in the individual and in society. As a description of the goal of spiritual endeavour in Buddhism, this affords us an insight into what Buddhism stands for. It is noteworthy in this connection, that the true *raison d'etre* of the *Madhupinḍika Sutta* is the question put to the Buddha by *Daṇḍapāṇi* the *Sākyan*: "*Kimvādī samano kim akkhāyī*" ("What is the doctrine of the recluse, what does he proclaim?"). The Buddha's reply runs thus:— "*Yathāvādī kho āvuso sadevake loke samāraṇe sabrahmaṇe sassamaṇabrāhmaṇiṇiṃ pajāya sadevamanussāya na kena ci loke viggayha tiṭṭhati, yathā ca pana kāmehi viśāmyuttamā viharantaṃ tam brāhmaṇam akathamkathim chinnakukkucam bhavābhava vītataṇham saññā nānuseṇti, evaṃvādī kho aham āvuso evamakkhāyī*"

— M. N. I 108.

"According to whatever doctrine, O brother, there is no contending with anyone in this world — with its gods, Māras and Brahmās, with the progeny of the world comprising recluses and brahmins, gods and men - and also due to which, perceptions no longer persist as latent proclivities in the mind of that brahmin<sup>1</sup>, even as he lives detached from sense-pleasures, without questionings, remorse cut off, and devoid of craving for reiterated existence — such is my doctrine, O brother, thus do I proclaim (it)."

Two prominent features of the Buddha's 'theory' are revealed by this reply. Firstly, his 'theory' is of such a kind that it does not entangle him in disputes and conflicts with anyone. Secondly, the biases and proclivities that normally underlie sense-perceptions, are extinct in him, freed as he is from bondage to sense desires, from doubt, remorse and craving. These two features are unique for his 'theory', since their opposites are generally true of dogmatic theories in the world. The Buddha's brief discourse to the monks, which we have analysed above, is merely the subsequent elucidation of his reply to *Daṇḍapāṇi* and *Mahākaccāna's* formula of sense perception — the locus classicus for our inquiry into *papañca* — is but a further commentary on that discourse. Hence we see that the question of *papañca* lies at

<sup>1</sup> The word here refers to the *arahant*.

the core of the Buddha's reply to *Daṇḍapāṇi*. All this is suggestive of the immense significance of the term in the psychological, ethical and philosophical spheres of the teachings of Buddhism.

From the *Madhupinḍika Sutta*, let us now pass on to other suttas which throw more light on the subject of our inquiry.

### Bondage of Concepts

The *Vepacitti Sutta* of the *Samyutta Nikāya* (IV 202ff) brings into clear relief the vicious proliferating tendency in ideation implied by '*papañca*' as well as the enslavement it entails. The parable of *Vepacitti Asurinda* ('king of Demons') related by the Buddha as a preamble to his sermon proper, is particularly significant in this respect. It concerns the mythical battle between gods and demons, and describes how the victorious gods bring *Vepacitti*, bound neck, hand and foot, to the presence of *Sakka*, the lord of gods. The five-fold bondage of *Vepacitti* has a peculiar mechanism about it. When *Vepacitti* thinks that the gods are righteous and the demons are unrighteous and desires to remain in the deva-world, he straightway beholds himself free from the bondage and possessed of the five pleasures of the senses. But as soon as he thinks that the demons are righteous and the gods are unrighteous, and wishes to go back to the *Asura* world, he finds himself bound with that five-fold bondage, divested of the five sensual pleasures. This fantastically subtle bondage is dependent on the very thoughts of the prisoner. Having cited this parable, the Buddha now effects the transition from mythology to psychology and philosophy.

"...*Evaṃ sukhumaṃ kho bhikkhave Vepacittibandhanam, tato sukhumataram Mārabandhanam. Maññamāno kho bhikkhave baddho Mārassa, amaññamāno mutto pāpimato. 'Asmīti' bhikkhave maññītametaṃ, 'Ayam aham asmīti' maññītametaṃ, 'Bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ, 'Na bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ, 'Rūpī bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ, 'Arūpī bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ, 'Saññī bhavissanti, maññītametaṃ, 'Asaññī bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ, 'Nevaśaññīnāsaññī bhavissanti' maññītametaṃ. Maññītam bhikkhave rogo, maññītam gaṇḍo, maññītam sallam. Tasmātiha bhikkhave amaññītamanena cetasā viharissāmāti. Evañhi vo bhikkhave sikkhitabbaṃ.*

'Asmīti' bhikkhave iñjītametaṃ, ayam aham asmīti ... nevasaññī nāsaññī bhavissanti ..... Tasmātiha bhikkhave aniñjamānena cetasā viharissāmāti. Evañhi vo bhikkhave sikkhitabbaṃ.

'Asmīti' bhikkhave phanditametaṃ .... Tasmātiha bhikkhave aphanamānena cetasā viharissāmāti. Evañhi vo bhikkhave sikkhitabbaṃ.

'Asmīti' bhikkhave papañcitametam ..... Tasmātiha bhikkhave nippapañcena cetasā viharissāmāti. Evañhi vo bhikkhave sikkhitabbaṃ.

'Asmīti' bhikkhave mānagatametam ..... Tasmātiha bhikkhave nihamānena cetasā viharissāmāti. Evañhi vo bhikkhave sikkhitabbaṃ.

"So subtle, brethren, is the bondage of *Vepacitti*, but more subtle still the bondage of *Māra*. He who imagines, brethren, is bound by *Māra*: he who does not imagine, is freed from the Evil One. 'I am' — this is an imagining. 'This am I' — that is an imagining. 'I shall be' — that is an imagining. 'I shall not be'..... 'Embodied shall I be' ... 'Formless shall I be' ... 'I shall be conscious'....'Unconscious shall I be' 'Neither conscious nor unconscious shall I be' .... The imagining, brethren, is a disease, imagining is an abscess, a barb. Wherefore, brethren ye must say: "With mind free from imaginings will we abide." Thus must ye train yourselves.

'I am', brethren, is an agitation. 'This am I' ... these, brethren, are agitations..... Wherefore, brethren, ye must say: "With mind free from agitation will we abide." Thus must ye train yourselves.

'I am,' brethren, is a palpitation. 'This am I' ... these, brethren, are palpitations, .. Wherefore, brethren, ye must say: "With mind free from palpitations will we abide." Thus must ye train yourselves.

'I am,' brethren, is a conceptual proliferation. 'This am I'..... these, brethren, are proliferations. Wherefore, brethren, ye must say: "With mind free from proliferations will we abide." Thus must ye train yourselves.

'I am,' brethren, is a conceit. 'This am I' ..... These, brethren, are conceits. Wherefore, brethren, ye must say: "With mind free from conceits will we abide." Thus must ye train yourselves."

K. S. IV 133 — 4

It will be seen that each of the nine propositions given above is qualified by five adjectives: '*maññitam*', '*iñjītam*', '*phanditam*', '*papañcitam*', and '*mānagatam*'.<sup>1</sup> These latter may be examined in the light of what we have already stated regarding the question of 'aspects' in Buddhist psychology. '*Maññita*' ( *man* - to think) points to the thought activity or imagination which gives rise to those propositions. '*Iñjīta*' ( *iñj* - 'to move') reminiscent of the term '*ejā*' which is a synonym for '*taṇhā*', probably refers to the emotional appeal of the propositions. '*Phanditam*' ( *spand* - 'to throb', 'to palpitate') views them as characterised by the restless mental activity. '*Mānagatam*' ( *mā* - 'to measure') traces their origin to the measuring and judging tendency inherent in conceptual activity, which is itself a constant process of value-judgment. '*Papañcitam*' (*pra-* *pañc* - 'to spread out', 'to expand') may likewise imply the prolific tendency in conceptualisation which gave rise to those propositions. The proposition '*asmī*' ('I am') is the foremost '*papañcita*,' and the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta* has already shown us why it is to be reckoned a product of '*papañca*'. The other propositions portray perhaps more clearly, the prolificity in the realm of ideation —the individuating, generalising, particularising and dichotomising tendencies which provide the scaffolding for theoretical superstructures. The particular context in which '*papañcita*' occurs in this *sutta*, thus lends colour to the assumption that '*papañca*' signifies the inveterate tendency towards proliferation in the realm of ideation.

Of an analogous character is a passage occurring at A.N. IV. 68. Here we find each of the alternatives of a quadrilemma being qualified in seven ways suggestive of aspects. The quadrilemma concerns the state of the Perfected One after his death and comprises the last four of the famous ten moot-points known as the Ten Indeterminates (*Dasa Avyākatavatthūni*). These ten, it may be added, together formed a kind of questionnaire with which the ancient Indians used to confront any religious teacher of note.<sup>2</sup> This questionnaire, arranged in dilemmas and quadrilemmas, seems to

<sup>1</sup> *Vibhanga* (p. 390-1) lists these nine items and qualifies them with the words *iñjīta*, *phanñita*, *papañcita* and *sañkhata*.

<sup>2</sup> S. N. IV 398 ('*Kutūhalasālā*' - *Avyākata Saṃyutta*.)



have been popularly regarded as a valid ready-reckoner for evaluating any religious system - hence the flippancy with which it was put forward. The Buddha himself was confronted with it on several occasions and in each case he rejected the questionnaire in toto, much to the dismay of the interrogators. He held that these ten questions are the outcome of wrong reflection and hence do not admit of a categorical reply. He declared that they are speculative views which are a veritable jungle of error - a set of fetters which bring suffering, frustration, dejection and anguish in their train. That being so, an attempt at their solution was not regarded as conducive to Enlightenment.<sup>1</sup> Now, the passage under consideration containing the quadrilemma, is yet another exposition of the unwholesome character of these speculative views. In it we find the Buddha explaining to a certain monk why an Ariyan disciple conversant with the Dhamma, does not entertain any doubts with regard to the Indeterminate points.

..... *Diṭṭhinirodhā kho bhikkhu sutavato ariyasāvakaṃ vicikicchā nuppajjati avyākatavatthusu. 'Hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇāti kho bhikkhu diṭṭhigatametam: 'Na hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇāti.... 'Hoti ca na hoti ca Tathāgato parammaraṇāti, -....'Neva hoti na na hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇāti' kho bhikkhu diṭṭhigatametam. Assutavā bhikkhu puthujjano diṭṭhim nappajānāti, diṭṭhisamudayaṃ n a p p a j ā n ā t i d i ṭ ṭ h i n i r o d h a ṃ n a p p a j ā n ā t i , diṭṭhinirodhagāminīpaṭipadam nappajānāti, tassa sā diṭṭhi pavaḍḍhati, so na parimuccati jāṭiyā jarāmaranena sokehi paridevehi dukkhehi domanassehi upāyāsehi, na parimuccati dukkhamāti vadāmi. Sutavā ca kho bhikkhu ariyasāvako diṭṭhim*

<sup>1</sup> "Sassato lokoti kho Vaccha, diṭṭhigatametam diṭṭhigahaṇam diṭṭhikantāram diṭṭhivisūkam, diṭṭhiviphanditam diṭṭhisamyojanam sadukkham savighātam saupāyāsam saparilāham, na nibbidāya na virāgāya na nirodhāya na upasamāya na abhiññāya na sambodhāya na nibbānāya samvattati ....."—M. N.I. 485.

"Vaccha, to think that the world is eternal — this is resorting to a (speculative) view, a jungle of views, a wilderness of views, it is accompanied by anguish, distress, misery, fever; it does not conduce to disenchantment nor to dispassion, cessation, calming, super-knowledge, awakening nor to *nibbāna*."

M. L. S. II 164.

*pajānāti, diṭṭhisamudayaṃ pajānāti, diṭṭhinirodham pajānāti, diṭṭhinirodhagāminīpaṭipadam pajānāti, tassa sā diṭṭhi nirujjhati. So parimuccati jāṭiyā ..... dukkhamāti vadāmi. Evam jānam kho bhikkhu sutavā ariyasāvako evam passam 'Hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇā ti' pi na vyākaroti, 'Na hoti...!', 'Hoti ca na hoti ca ..... ' 'Neva hoti na na hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇātipi na vyākaroti. Evam jānam kho bhikkhu sutavā ariyasāvako, evam passam nacchambhati na kampati na calati na vedhati na santāsam āpajjati avyākata vatthusu. 'Hoti Tathāgato kho bhikkhu taṇhāgatametam saññāgatametam, maññitametam, papañcitametam, upādāna-gatametam, vippaṭisāro eso. Na hoti .... Hoti ca na hoti ca ... .. neva hoti na na hoti ..... vippaṭisāro eso..... .."*

"Verily, it is by the cessation of views, monk, that doubt ceases to arise in the instructed noble disciple as to unexplained points. 'Is the *Tathāgata* after death?' This is but a viewpoint, monk; 'Is the *Tathāgata* not after death?' 'Both is he and is he not after death?' 'Neither is he nor is he not after death' - these are but view points, monk.

"The uninstructed average man does not understand views, does not understand the origin of views, does not understand the cessation of views, does not understand the way leading to the cessation of views. For him views grow; and he is not freed from birth, old age, death, from sorrows, grief, ills, tribulations; he is not freed from suffering, I say.

"But the instructed noble disciple understands views, understands their origin, their cessation and the way leading to their cessation. For him views cease; and he is freed from birth, old age, death, from sorrows, grief, ills, tribulations; he is freed from suffering, I say.

"Thus knowing, thus seeing, the instructed noble disciple indeed, does not assert, 'Is the *Tathāgata* after death' and like questions... Thus knowing, thus seeing, the instructed noble disciple thus holds as unexplained, the unexplained points. Thus knowing, thus seeing, the instructed noble disciple is not afraid, trembles not, wavers not, shakes not, despairs not, concerning these points. 'Is the *Tathāgata* after death?' and the like .... These, monks, are but ways of craving..... of perceptions .... are but imaginings ... conceptual proliferations ... issues of grasping .... are but a source of remorse.

—G. S. IV 39 - 40.

One can discern the criticism of the quadrilemma in the seven standpoints from which it is viewed. *'Diṭṭhigataṃ'* suggests the speculative nature of the view. *'Tanhāgataṃ'* may well refer to the desire that prompts one to 'entertain' these views. *'Saññāgataṃ'* reminds us of the sensory origin of the same. *'Maññītaṃ'* points to the thought activity or imagination that precedes their formulation. *'Upādānagataṃ'* refers to the grasping aspect which makes them dogmas. *'Vippaṇisāro'* emphasises the delusion and wavering that they bring about. As for *'papañcitaṃ'* we may infer that it visualises the proliferating, expanding and diffusing quality of the speculative views in question. The above quadrilemma is actually illustrative of those qualities since it is an unwarranted extension of linguistic conventions to what is transcendental.

The dialogue between *Mahā Koṭṭhita* and *Sāriputta* at A. N. II 161 also gives us an insight into the conceptual prolificity implied by *'papañca.'* Here again, the four questions put to *Sāriputta* by *Mahā Koṭṭhita* assume the form of a quadrilemma relating to the transcendental.

*Channaṃ āvuso phassāyatanānaṃ asesavirāgaṇirodhā atth' aññaṃ kiñcīti — Mā hevaṃ āvuso. Channaṃ āvuso ... natth' aññaṃ kiñcī' ti — Mā hevaṃ āvuso' ti. — Channaṃ āvuso ... atthi ca natthi caññaṃ kiñcī' ti. - Mā hevaṃ āvuso. - Channaṃ āvuso..... nevatthi no natth' aññaṃ kiñcīti. - Mā hevaṃ āvuso.-*

*Channaṃ āvuso phassāyatanānaṃ asesavirāgaṇirodhā atth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti puṭṭho samāno 'Mā hevaṃ āvuso' ti vadesi. Channaṃ .... natth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti puṭṭho samāno 'Mā hevaṃ āvuso' ti vadesi. Channaṃ .....atthi ca natthi caññaṃ kiñcīti puṭṭho samāno 'Mā hevaṃ āvuso' ti vadesi. Channaṃ .... nevatthi no natth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti puṭṭho samāno 'Mā hevaṃ āvuso' ti vadesi. Yathākathampānāvuso imassa bhāsitaṃ attho daṭṭhabbo ti.*

*Channaṃ āvuso atth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti vadaṃ appapañcaṃ papañceti. - Channaṃ āvuso ... natth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti vadaṃ appapañcaṃ papañceti. Channaṃ āvuso ... atthi ca natthi caññaṃ kiñcīti iti vadaṃ appapañcaṃ papañceti. Channaṃ āvuso ... nevatthi no natth' aññaṃ kiñcīti iti vadaṃ appapañcaṃ papañceti.*

*Yāvata āvuso channaṃ phassāyatanānaṃ gati tāvatā papañcassa gati, yāvata papañcassa gati, tāvatā channaṃ phassāyatanānaṃ gati. Channaṃ āvuso phassāyatanānaṃ asesavirāgaṇirodhā papañcaṇirodho papañcavūpasamoti.*

"Pray, brother when the six spheres of contact cease without residue, is there anything still left?"

"Ah! say not so, brother."

"Pray, brother, when the six spheres of contact cease without residue, is there not anything still left?"

"Ah! say not so, brother."

"Pray brother, when the six spheres of contact cease without residue, is it the case that there both is and is not anything still left?"

"Ah! say not so, brother."

"Pray, brother, when the six spheres of contact cease without residue, is it the case that there neither is nor is not anything still left?"

"Ah! say not so, brother."

"To my several questions thus put, brother, on each occasion you reply: 'Ah! say not so, brother.' Now what am I to understand by this?"

"Brother, he who says: 'When the six spheres of contact cease without residue there is still something left,' is conceptualising what should not be proliferated conceptually..... (repeat with regard to the other three). Brother, whatever is the range of the six spheres of contact, that itself is the range of prolific conceptualisation. And whatever is the range of prolific conceptualisation, that itself is the range of the six spheres of contact. By the utter detachment from, and the cessation of the six spheres of contact, there comes to be the cessation, the allayment of prolific conceptualisation."

*Sāriputta* disallows all four alternatives, saying that they reflect an attempt to indulge in *'papañca'* where one should not resort to it (*appapañcaṃ < Sk: aprapañcya? — hypothetical*). He points out that the scope of *'papañca'* is co-extensive with the range of the six senses, and that the cessation of the spheres of six senses without residue, results in the cessation or allayment of *papañca*. Thus the quadrilemma, of *Mahākoṭṭhita* turns out to be yet another illustration of the presumptuous attempt of the phenomenal consciousness to

transgress its limits of applicability (i.e., the empirical), by overflowing into the transcendental in a spree of speculative metaphysics. Dogmatic speculative views are by far the most virulent and typical instances of 'papañca' in the sense of prolific conceptualisation.

The reference to a range of 'papañca' ('papañcassa gati') in *Sāriputta's* reply, is strongly suggestive of the dynamic import of the term in Buddhist psychology. This particular aspect is evident in several other contexts. At *Udāna* p. 77, for instance, we find the Buddha giving utterance to the following paean of joy while reflecting on the fact that he has rid himself of concepts characterised by proliferating tendencies of the mind ( .... *attano papañcasaññāsankhāpahānaṃ paccavekkhamāno*....)

*Yassa papañcā ṭhiti ca natthi  
sandhānaṃ paḷighaṇca vītivatto  
taṃ nittaṇhaṃ munim carantaṃ  
nāva jānāti sadevako pi loko.*

"He in whom ramblings and standing-still are no more  
He who has overcome bond and hindrance,  
That sage, from craving free as he fares onward,  
The world with its devas contradicts him not."

Here the juxtaposition of 'papañca' ('ramblings') with 'ṭhiti' ('standing-still') seems to suggest the primary sense of the term with its dynamic overtones. Metaphorically conceived, 'papañca' signifies the ramblings in the realm of ideation and 'ṭhiti' the dormant tendencies of the mind (*anusaya*)<sup>1</sup> which prompt those ramblings.

A verse at S. N. IV 71 also conveys this primary sense of 'papañca' besides pointing to its essential connection with the process of sense perception.

*Papañcasaññā itarītarā narā  
papañcayantā upayanti saññino  
manomayaṃ ghasitañca sabbam  
panujja nekkhammasitaṃ irīyati.*

<sup>1</sup> cf. *Ṭhiti nāma anusayā* - Netti. 37

'Being endowed with sense-perception, human beings whose consciousness is characterised by the prolific tendency, approach sense-objects (mentally) by proliferating conceptually. Giving up all that is mind-made and is appertaining to household life; he (the recluse) resorts to that which is connected with renunciation.'

The approach here meant is a mental one as suggested by the word '*manomayaṇ*', and it is done in the course of mental ramblings. One might also note the significance of the word '*upayanti*' especially in its sense of 'calling' or 'reckoning'.

The fact that '*papañca*' is usually looked upon as a peculiar mental activity which the worldling is wont to indulge in, becomes evident from a sutta in the *Sārāṇīya Vagga* of the *Anguttara Nikāya* (A. N. III 292ff). *Sāriputta* there enumerates six types of activity, which if habitually indulged in ('*anuyutta*'), would hinder the spiritual progress of a monk.

*"Idhāvuso bhikkhu kammārāmo hoti kammarato kammārāmataṃ anuyutto, bhassārāmo hoti bhassarato bhassārāmataṃ anuyutto, niddārāmo hoti niddārato niddārāmataṃ anuyutto, saṅgaṇikārāmo hoti saṅgaṇikarato saṅgaṇikārāmataṃ anuyutto, saṃsaggārāmo hoti saṃsaggārato saṃsaggārāmataṃ anuyutto papañcārāmo hoti papañcarato papañcārāmataṃ anuyutto. Evaṃ kho āvuso bhikkhu tathā tathā vihāraṃ kappeti, yathā yathāssa vihāraṃ kappayato na bhaddhikaṃ maraṇaṃ hoti na bhaddikā kālakiriya. Ayaṃ vuccatāvuso bhikkhu sakkāyābhīrato, na pahāsi sakkāyaṃ sammā dukkhassa antakiriyaṃ'ti.*

Herein, brethren, a monk finds delight in worldly activity, is delighted in worldly activity, gets engrossed in the delight of worldly activity; so too, of talk, sleep, company, companionship and prolific conceptualisation - finding delight in each, he is delighted with each and gets engrossed in the delight of each; and thus, brethren, the more he so fashions his life, the more he fashions it to a woeful death, a woeful fate; and of this monk it is said: He is greatly delighted in selfhood; he has not got rid of selfhood for the utter ending of Ill."

G. S. III 210 - 211

The last in the list (*papañca*) is obviously reckoned the most important, so much so that its ethical significance is summed up in a couplet at the end of the sutta.

*Yo papañcaṃ anuyutto - papañcābhirato mago  
virādhayī so Nibbānaṃ - yogakkhemaṃ anuttaraṃ  
Yo ca papañcaṃ hitvāna - nippapañcapathe rato  
ārādhayī so Nibbānaṃ - yogakkhemaṃ anuttaraṃ*<sup>1</sup>

'The fool who indulges in and delights in prolific conceptualisation, is far removed from *Nibbāna* - the incomparable freedom from bondage.

'He who, having given up such conceptualisation, delights in the path to non-proliferation - he attains to *Nibbāna*, the incomparable freedom from bondage.'

### Path to Non-Proliferation

Thus the inveterate tendency towards proliferation of concepts manifesting itself through Craving, Conceit and Views ('*taṇhā*,' '*māna*,' '*diṭṭhi*'), is said to estrange the monk from *Nibbāna*, and the aim of the spiritual endeavours is said to lie in the direction of non-proliferation. The path to this state of '*nippapañca*' is set out in the *Sakkapañha-sutta* of the *Dīgha Nikāya*. In this sutta, *Sakka*, the interlocutor, inquires of the Buddha why all great classes of beings such as gods, men, *Asuras*, *Nāgas* and *Gandhabbas*, live in enmity, hating, hostile and malign, in spite of the fact that they wish to live without enmity or hatred. Through a causally connected series of mental states, the Buddha ultimately traces the origin of this unpleasant situation, to the question of '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*'.<sup>2</sup> Those mental states, cited in their due order would read as follows.-

*'issā - macchariya < piyappiya < chanda < vitakka < papañcasaññā saṅkhā.*

envy and selfishness < things dear and not dear < desire < ratiocination < concepts tinged with the prolific tendency.

The causal connection between '*vitakka*' and '*papañcasaññā-saṅkhā*', might, at first sight, appear intriguing. Acquaintance with the

<sup>1</sup> These verses are found also at Thag. vv. 989 - 90.

<sup>2</sup> The *Kalahavivāda Sutta* (Sn. 168 ff) also presents a more or less similar series of mental states in tracing the origin of disputes to '*papañca-saṅkhā*'. — a term virtually equivalent to '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*'.

*Madhupiṇḍika* formula of sense-perception (Sic! *vitakka > papañca*) might make one wonder whether we have here a reversal of the correct order (*vitakka < papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*). But the contradiction is more apparent than real. The assertion of the *Sakkapañha sutta* that '*vitakka*' originates from '*papañca saññā-saṅkhā*' only means that in the case of the worldling the word or concept grasped as an object for ratiocination, is itself a product of '*papañca*'. This, in its turn breeds more of its kind when one proceeds to indulge in conceptual proliferation (*papañca*). Concepts characterised by the proliferating tendency (*papañca - saññā-saṅkhā*) constitute the raw material for the process and the end product is much the same in kind though with this difference that it has greater potency to obsess, bewilder and overwhelm the worldling. Thus there is a curious reciprocity between '*vitakka*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' - a kind of vicious circle, as it were. Given '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', there comes to be '*vitakka*' and given '*vitakka*' there arise more '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', resulting in the subjection to the same.<sup>1</sup> Owing to this reciprocity, the path leading to the cessation of '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' as propounded in the *Sakkapañha Sutta*, consists of a mode of training aimed at the progressive elimination of '*vitakka*' and '*vicāra*'.

*"Kathaṃ paṇipanno pana mārisa, bhikkhu papañca-saññā—saṅkhā—nirodha—sārappa-gāminī-paṭipadaṃ paṭipanno hoti?"*

*"Somanassam p'ahaṃ devānaminda duvidhena vadāmi sevi-tabbampi asevitabbampī'ti. Domanassam p'ahaṃ ..... Upekkhaṃ p'ahaṃ ... asevitabbampīti.*

*Somanassam p'ahaṃ duvidhena ... asevitabbampīti iti kho panetaṃ vuttam. Kiñcetaṃ paṭicca vuttam? Tattha yaṃ jaññā somanassaṃ: 'Imaṃ kho me somanassaṃ sevato akusalā dhammā abhivaḍḍhanti kusalā dhammā parihāyanti evarūpaṃ somanassaṃ*

<sup>1</sup> cf '.....vitakkapaññattiyā sati papañca-saññā- -saṅkhā - samudā - caraṇa-paññattim paññapessatīti ihānaṃ etaṃ vijjati'

'This situation occurs that when there is the designation of reasoning, one will point out the designation of the assault of the concepts tinged with the proliferating tendency of consciousness.'

*na sevitaḅbaṃ. Tattha yaṃ jaññā somanassaṃ: Imaṃ..... sevato akusalā dhammā parihāyanti kusalā dhammā abhivaṇṇhantīti evarūpaṃ somanassaṃ sevitaḅbaṃ. Tattha yañce savitakkaṃ savicāraṃ yañce avitakkaṃ avicāraṃ ye avitakke avicāre se pañītatāre.*

*.....Domanassampāham duvidhena... ye avitakke avicāre se pañītatāre...Upekhaṃpāham duvidhena ... ye avitakke avicāre se pañītatāre.*

*Evam paṭipanno kho devānaminda bhikkhu papañca-saññā saṅkhā-nirodha-sārappa-gāminī paṭipadaṃ paṭipanno hotīti'.*

"But how, Sir, has that *bhikkhu* gone about, who has reached the path suitable for and leading to the cessation of concepts tinged with the proliferating tendency".

"Happiness, ruler of gods, I declare to be twofold, according as it is to be followed after or avoided. Unhappiness too, I declare to be twofold....- Equanimity, too, I declare to be twofold.....

"And the distinction I have affirmed in happiness, was drawn on these grounds: When in following after happiness one perceives that bad qualities develop and good qualities are diminished that kind of happiness should be avoided. And when following after happiness one perceives that bad qualities are diminished and good qualities develop, then such happiness should be followed. Now of such happiness as is accompanied by ratiocination and of such as is not so accompanied, the latter is the more excellent.

"Again, ruler of gods, when I declare unhappiness to be twofold..... the latter is the more excellent..... Again, ruler of gods, when I declare equanimity to be twofold.... the latter is the more excellent.

"And it is in this way that a *bhikkhu*, O ruler of gods, must have gone about, who has reached the path suitable for and leading to the cessation of concepts tinged with the proliferating tendency."

It is significant that although 'applied and sustained thoughts' (*vitakka vicāra*) conducive to wholesome mental states are utilised to eliminate those conducive to unwholesome mental states — much in

the same way as a carpenter would drive out a blunt peg with a sharper one<sup>1</sup> they have merely a relative value. They themselves should finally leave the scene making way for '*Paññā*' (Wisdom) which is immediate and intuitive. Hence the recurrent maxim in the above passage (underlined). A detailed exposition of the process of gradual elimination of concepts occurs in the *Poṭṭhapāda Sutta* of the *Dīgha Nikāya*. There one finds the carpenter-like operation for the deconceptualisation of the mind, whereby each successive 'peg' is being replaced by a sharper one until at last he is able to pull out with ease the sharpest of them all. Indeed the stages there enumerated are 'pegs' on which consciousness hangs — to mix a metaphor. The crucial decision which precedes the removal of the last 'peg' may be fully appreciated in the light of '*papañca*'.

*"Yato kho Poṭṭhapāda bhikkhu idha saka-saññī hoti, so tato amutra tato amutra anupubbena saññaggam phusati. Tassa saññagge ṛhitassa evam hoti: 'Cetayamānassa me pāpiyo, acetayamānassa me seyyo. Ahañceva kho pana ceteyyaṃ abhisamkhareyyaṃ imā ca me saññā nirujjheyyaṃ aññā ca oḷārikā saññā uppajjeyyaṃ. Yaṃ nūnāhaṃ na ceteyyaṃ na abhisamkhareyyanti.' So na ceva ceteti na abhisamkaroti, tassa acetayato anabhisamkharoto tā ceva saññā nirujjhanti, aññā ca oḷārikā saññā na uppajjanti. So nirodham p h u s a t i . E v a ṃ k h o P o ṭ ṭ h a p ā d a a n u p u b b ā b h i s a ṅ ṅ ā n i r o d h a s a m p a j ā n a s a m ā p a t t i h o t i .*

—D. N. I 184 ff

"So, from the time *Poṭṭhapāda*, that the *bhikkhu* is thus conscious in a way brought about by himself (i.e., from the time of the First Rapture), he goes on from one stage to the next, and from that to the next, until he reaches the summit of consciousness. And when he is on the summit of consciousness, it may occur to him: "To be thinking at all, is the inferior state. It were better not to be thinking. Were I to go on thinking and fancying, these ideas, these states of consciousness I have reached, would pass away, but other coarser ones, might arise, And so I will neither think nor fancy any more." And he does not. And to him neither thinking any more, nor fancying, the ideas, the states of consciousness he had, pass away; and no others, coarser than them,

<sup>1</sup> This simile is in fact, found in the *Vitakkasaṅghāna Sutta*

arise. So he touches (the state of) Cessation. Thus is it, *Poṭṭhapāda*, that the mindful attainment of the cessation of perceptions takes place step by step."

The *Poṭṭhapāda Sutta* thus vividly portrays how one can 'step out' as it were, from the ambit of the centripetal forces of 'papañca', having gradually forced one's way through to the peripheral layers of the whirling maze of 'papañca', where those forces are at their weakest.

The close relationship between 'vitakka' and 'papañca' as well as the necessity of allaying them, seems to be hinted at in the *Uraga Sutta* of the *Sutta Nipāta*. It is noteworthy that the refrain running throughout this *Sutta* of seventeen stanzas, emphasizes the fact that a monk has to quit all bounds both here and hereafter even as the snake sloughs off its worn-out skin. Now, two of the unwholesome tendencies whose abandonment is recommended in the *Sutta*, are 'vitakka' and 'papañca'. They are referred to in two contiguous verses, thus:—

*Yassa vitakkā vidhūpitā  
ajjhataṃ suvikappitā asesā  
so bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ  
urago jīṇṇamiva tacāṃ purānaṃ — (Vs. 7)*

'In whom all thoughts which have been concocted within, are burnt without residue, that monk quits bounds both here and hereafter even as the snake its worn-out skin.'<sup>1</sup>

*Yo nāccasārī na paccasārī  
sabbāṃ accagamā imaṃ papañcaṃ  
so bhikkhu jahāti orapāraṃ  
urago jīṇṇamiva tacāṃ purānaṃ — (Vs. 8)*

<sup>1</sup> The commentary, however, prefers to explain the first two lines of this stanza so as to mean that evil *vitakkas* connected with lust, ill-will and harm have been totally *cut-off* ('*suvikkappitā*') within the monk when he attains Arahantship. It is perhaps more appropriate to treat '*suvikkappitā*' as an adjective qualifying 'vitakka' rather than as a verb on a par with '*vidhūpitā*'. Thus the expression '*ajjhataṃ suvikappitā*' can mean "*well concocted or fabricated within*". In support of this, attention may be drawn to the implications of the word '*vikalpa*'. (Cf. Ud. 71; S. N. I 126)

'Who neither transgresses nor lags behind, who has transcended all this conceptual proliferation; that monk quits bounds both here and hereafter even as the snake its worn-out skin'.

One might note how harmoniously the implications of '*papañca*' blend with the expression '*nāccasārī na paccasārī*', as well as with the refrain of the verses.

Specific instructions for the elimination of '*papañca*' by controlling its gate-ways of '*Vitakka-vicāra*' may be seen even in some of the most elementary ethical teachings of Buddhism. For instance, at the level of sense-restraint enjoined for the monk, it is said that he should not dwell on the general or special characteristics of the data of sense-experience lest unwholesome mental states should flow into his mind.

"And how, O King, is the *bhikkhu* guarded as to the doors of his senses?

'When, O King, he sees an object with his eye, he is not entranced in the general appearance or the details of it. He sets himself to restrain that which might give occasion for evil mental states, covetousness and dejection to flow in over him so long as he dwells unrestrained as to his sense of sight. He keeps watch over his faculty of sight and he attains to mastery over it. And so in like manner, when he hears a sound with his ears, or smells an odour with his nose, or tastes a flavour with his tongue, or feels a touch with his body, or when he cognises a phenomenon with his mind, he is not entranced in the general appearance or the details of it .... "

— D. B. I 79 - 80, (D. N. I. 70)

This appears to be more or less the ethical statement of what was philosophically stated in the formula of sense-perception in the *Madhupiṇḍika sutta*. The influx of evil mental states tends to overwhelm the monk who is lax in sense-control and thus brings about the subjection to '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*'.

The fact that the seemingly simple ethical injunction given above, has a deeper significance, would become clearer when we compare it with the Buddha's pithy exhortation to *Bāhiya Dārucīriya* as found in the *Bodhivagga* of the *Udāna*. This exhortation — it must be noted—was so profound at its philosophical core, that *Bāhiya* attained emancipation, then and there. It is, however, tantalisingly brief, and runs as follows:-

"*Tasmātiha, Bāhiya, evaṃ sikkhitabbaṃ: diṭṭhe diṭṭhamattaṃ bhavissati, sute sutamattaṃ bhavissati, mute mutamattaṃ bhavissati, viññāte viññātamattaṃ bhavissati. Evañhi te Bāhiya sikkhitabbaṃ: Yato kho te Bāhiya diṭṭhe ... sute ... mute ... viññāte viññātamattaṃ bhavissati, tato tvaṃ Bāhiya na tena, yato tvaṃ Bāhiya na tena, tato tvaṃ Bāhiya na tattha, yato tvaṃ Bāhiya na tattha, tato tvaṃ Bāhiya nev'idha na huraṃ na ubhayamantarena esevanto dukkhassāti.*"<sup>1</sup>

"Then, *Bāhiya*, thus must you train yourself: 'In the seen there will be just the seen; in the heard, just the heard; in the sensed, just the sensed;<sup>2</sup> in the cognized, just the cognized. That is how, O *Bāhiya*, you must train yourself. Now, when, *Bāhiya*, in the seen there will be to you just the seen, in the heard . . . . just the cognized, then *Bāhiya*, you will have no 'thereby': when you have no 'thereby,' then *Bāhiya*, you will have no 'therein'; as you, *Bāhiya*, will have no 'therein' it follows that you will have no 'here' or 'beyond', or 'midway-between'. That is just the end of Ill."

—M. A. P. C 10.

The first part of the exhortation presents succinctly the sum-total of sense - restraint, while the latter part interprets the philosophy behind it. This sense-restraint consists in '*stopping-short*', at the level of sense-data without being led astray by them. He who succeeds in this, has truly comprehended the nature of sense-data so that he no longer thinks in terms of them ('*na tena*' = no '*thereby*', '*na tattha*' = no '*therein*'). He has thus transcended the superstitions of the grammatical structure as also the verbal dichotomy (*nev' idha, na huraṃ, na ubhayamantarena* = '*neither here nor beyond nor midway between*'). In short, he has attained the Goal. As for *Bāhiya*, he did attain the Goal, and that almost instantaneously, since he had developed his spiritual faculties to such an extent in his own religious system, that—we are told in the *Sutta* - he even entertained the illusion of being an arahant before he came to the Buddha.

<sup>1</sup> The Commentary cites a number of conflicting interpretations of this cryptic passage.

<sup>2</sup> '*Muta*', stands for the sense impressions received by smelling, tasting and touching.

The consummation of the training in sense' restraint, therefore, consists in the ability to refrain from 'thinking in terms of' (*maññanā*) the data of sensory experience. The chimerical and elusive nature of sense data is such that as soon as one thinks in terms of them, one is estranged from reality. This fact is brought out in the following verse in the *Dvayatānupassanā Sutta of the Sutta Nipāta*.

*Yena yena hi maññanti - tato taṃ hoti aññathā  
taṃ hi tassa musā hoti - mosadhammaṃ hi ittaraṃ*

—v. 757

"In whatever egoistic terms they think of an object, *ipso facto* it becomes otherwise. And herein, verily, lies its falseness, the puerile deceptive phenomenon that it is."

It is this same relentless tyranny of the empirical consciousness that is metaphorically put across in the parable of *Vepacitti* discussed above. '*Maññanā*' (imaginings) which stem from the triune '*papañca*' centering on the ego, are themselves even called '*papañca*' as we have already pointed out. Hence, to resort to '*maññanā*' is to identify oneself with the sense data, as suggested by the term '*tammayo*'.<sup>1</sup> No sooner does one clutch at these data with '*maññanā*' (imaginings) than they slip into unreality. This is most probably the philosophical implication of the well-known simile of the Buddha in which the aggregate of perceptions (*saññā*) is compared to a mirage — the typical illustration of elusiveness (vide supra 7 fn 1). Thus percepts are elusive, while the concepts with which we reach out for and 'grasp' them, are delusive. Since identification with sense-data results in the vain quest of '*papañca*', one desists therefrom, holds oneself aloof ('*tammayo*') and attempts to view those data objectively. As the *Sappurisa Sutta* of the *Majjhima Nikāya* explains in detail, this training ultimately enables one to rid oneself of all proclivities to imaginings ('*maññanā*') after the attainment of the Cessation of Perceptions and Sensations ('*Saññāvedayitanirodha-samāpatti*').

<sup>1</sup> '*Tammayo*' = tad + maya, (lit.) 'made of that' — Nid. I 206, '*Na hi tammayo so' ti na taṇhāvasena diṭṭhivasena tammayo hoti tapparamo tapparāyano*'. — The word and its opposite, occur at M. III 42 ff, Sn. 846, A. N. I 150.

... Sappuriso ca kho bhikkhave iti paṭisañcikkhati: Nevasaññā-nāsaññāyatana samāpattiyāpi kho *atammayatā* vuttā Bhagavatā; yena yena hi maññanti tato taṃ hoti aññathā ti. So atammayataraṃ yeva antaraṃ karitvā tāya nevasaññānāsaññāyatana samāpattiyā nev' attānukkaṃseti na paraṃ vaṃbheti. Ayam pi, bhikkhave, sappurisadhammo.

*Puna ca paraṃ, bhikkhave, sappuriso sabbaso nevasaññānāsaññāyatanaṃ samatikkama saññāvedayitanirodhaṃ upasampajja viharati, paññāya cassa disvā āsavā parikkhayāpentī. Ayampi, bhikkhave, bhikkhu na kiñci maññāti, na kuhinci maññāti, na kenaci maññatīti.*"

— M.N. III 44 - 45

"But a good man reflects thus, monks: Lack of desire (non-identification) even for the plane of neither-perception-nor-non-perception has been spoken of by the Lord: 'for whatever they imagine it to be, thereby it becomes otherwise.' He, having made lack of desire (non-identification) itself the main thing, neither exalts himself on account of that attainment of the plane of neither-perception-nor-non-perception, nor disparages others. This, too, monks, is dhamma of a good man.

"And again, monks, a good man, by passing quite beyond the plane of neither-perception-nor-non-perception, enters on and abides in the cessation of perception and feeling, and when he has seen by means of wisdom, his cankers are caused to be destroyed. And, monks, this monk does not imagine he is aught or anywhere or in anything."

— M. L. S. III 93 - 94

The sage who, by putting an end to '*maññanā*' no longer identifies himself with any element of sense data, is called '*Atammayo*'.

*Pasayha māraṃ abhibhuyya antakaṃ.  
yo ca phusī jātikkhayaṃ padhānavā  
so tādiso<sup>1</sup> lokavidū sumedho  
sabbesu dhammesu atammayo muni*

— A. N. I. 150

<sup>1</sup> It is likely that the word '*tādī*' or '*tādiso*' used as an epithet for the emancipated sage, bears some relation to the word '*tammaya*'. Being derived

"That persevering sage who, having conquered Māra, and vanquished Death, has reached the end of births, the wise one, endowed with true knowledge of the world, is 'such' and as regards all phenomena, he is not 'of-them'."

From the standpoint of the average worldling, there is an ego as the agent or mentor behind the sum-total of sense-experience. Its existence is postulated on the basis of a wide variety of soul-theories, and its reality as an incontrovertible self-evident fact of experience, is readily taken for granted. Even at the end of a thorough introspection, he is often tempted to agree with Descartes in concluding 'Cogito, ergo sum' ("I think, therefore, I am"). Thus behind the data of sense-experience conditionally arisen, there looms large the illusion of an ego as the agent. It is the root of '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', and its eradication, the aim of the spiritual training in Buddhism. This fact is clearly brought out in the following two verses of the *Tuvaṇṇaka Sutta* (Sn.)

*Pucchāmi taṃ ādiccabandhuṃ  
vivekaṃ santipadañca mahesiṃ:  
kathaṃ disvā nibbāti bhikkhu  
anupādiyāno lokasmiṃ kiñci?*

— ibid, v 915

"I ask you, who are a kinsman of the *Ādiccas* and a great sage, about seclusion and the state of peace, with what manner of insight, and not grasping anything in this world, does a bhikkhu realize *Nibbāna*?"

*Mūlaṃ papañcasaṅkhāyāti Bhagavā  
mantā asmīti sabbam uparundhe,  
Yā kāci taṇhā ajjhataṃ  
tāsam vinayā sadā sato sikkhe.*

— ibid, v 916

from '*tādrs*' ('*tad* + *drs*) it means 'of that appearance', 'like that' or 'such'. The sage never identifies himself with any phenomenon that we usually associate with him, though, apparently he does. Thus he is 'like that' (*tādiso*) but not 'of that'. (*atammayo*). This may well account for the firmness and steadfastness of the sage. (cf. *Kālakārāma Sutta*, A. N. II 24 f.)



"Let him completely cut off the root of concepts tinged with the prolific tendency, namely, the notion - 'I am the thinker'.<sup>1</sup> "—so said the Buddha. "Whatever inward cravings there be, let him train himself to subdue them, being always mindful."

The eradication of the illusion of an ego, has to be accomplished through penetrative wisdom focussed on one's own personality. He has to analyse the mental and corporeal constituents of his individuality and see them in their correct perspective, as being impermanent (*anicca*), fraught with suffering (*dukkha*) and not his own (*anattā*). He has to bring about a total transformation of his concept of individuality which is characterised by '*papañca*'. A verse in the *Sabhiya Sutta* (Sn.) may be examined with profit in this connection.

*Anuvicca papañca nāmarūpaṃ  
ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca rogamūlaṃ,  
sabbarogamūlabandhanā pamutto  
anuvidito tādi pavuccate tathattā.*

— Sn. v. 530

"He who has comprehended 'name-and form characterised by the prolific tendency', which is the root of sickness within and without, is released from bondage to the root of all sickness, and is truly called the 'Knowing One' — the 'Such'".

The '*papañca*' which taints the worldling's concept of his individuality is none other than the notion of an ego (v. *supra* 14 - '*asmīti bhikkhave papañcitam*'). This wrong notion is said to be the root of all sickness within the individual and out in the society. The diseases in the case of the individual, are lust (*rāga*), hatred (*dosa*)

<sup>1</sup> The *Niddesa* takes '*mantā*' to be a synonym for '*paññā*' ('*mantā vuccati paññā* - p. 497) or wisdom. But the primary meaning can be traced to the agent noun '*mantar*' (sk. *mantr*) - 'thinker' as it has been suggested in the P. T. S. Dictionary. 'Wisdom' may be regarded as a secondary meaning which is permissible in many a context where the word occurs. Yet in this context the primary sense ('thinker') is preferable. (See also Bst. Psy. of Perc. pg.5; A, N. IV 103; Sn. vs, 159).

and delusion (*moha*), while some of their symptomatic manifestations in the society are quarrels (*kalaha*), strife (*viggaha*), dispute (*vivāda*), conceit (*mānātimāna*), slander (*pesuñña*), jealousy and avarice (*issāmacchariya*). The relevance of '*papañca*' to an analysis of the individual and social sickness referred to above, is amply illustrated in *suttas* like *Madhupiṇḍika*, *Sakkapañha* and *Kalahavivāda*.

The above verse has received a different interpretation at the hands of Dr. Saratchandra. He observes:—

"... We should consider that here, too, the term *nāmarūpa* meant both the empirical individual, made up of physiological and psychological factors, as well as the entire world including himself, components of mind and matter. The belief that the normal thinking consciousness constitutes the real individual, is the internal sickness (*ajjahattam*). It is for this thinking consciousness that an external world exists. The idea of the external world is therefore, the sickness outside (*bahiddhā*). He who has pierced this veil (*anuvicca*) is called the knowing one (*anuvidita*), for he has attained to true understanding of things as they really are (*tatha*)".

— Bst. Psy. of Perc. pg. 8

On the strength of this interpretation of the verse, he proceeds to define the term '*papañca*':—

"... Sense perception, therefore, implies a dual relationship, the relationship of the perceiving individual and the world as perceived. In its subjective aspect it is consciousness, and in its objective aspect it is the world of perception, and *papañca* is the general term for both aspects."

He seems to have construed the verse in such a manner as to identify the 'internal and external sickness' with the term '*papañca-nāmarūpa*'. The bifurcation he resorts to in his definition of '*papañca*' as the 'perceiving individual and the world as perceived', - is the logical outcome of this identification. There is also an overlapping of the definitions given to '*papañca*' and '*nāmarūpa*', which almost gives rise to a tautology. A comparison of the verse in question

with five other verses occurring in the same *sutta*,<sup>1</sup> would however reveal that the verse has to be differently construed and interpreted. The phrase '*ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca*' (internal and external) occurs in those five verses as well, and taken in conjunction with the word '*sabba*' (all) occurring in four of them, it seems to denote the 'individual' and 'social' aspects of the subject dealt with in each verse, conveying the idea of comprehensiveness. Yet the v. 532 has a closer resemblance to the particular verse under consideration, in that it refers to the root of all bondage ('*sabbasaṅgamūla*') both internal and external. Hence both verses seem to envisage something radical in their first line — something which is the root of bondage or sickness manifest in the individual and in the society. It is not advisable, therefore, to identify the 'sickness' with '*papañca-nāmarūpa*' occurring in the first line of the verse, as Dr. Saratchandra does. Nor is it necessary to bifurcate '*papañca nāmarūpa*' into two aspects as internal and external, as the pair of words '*ajjhataṃ*' and '*bahiddhā*' pertains to the sickness itself rather than to its root. We have already pointed out with special reference to suttas like *Madhupiṇḍika*, *Sakkapañha*, and *Kalahavivāda*, the nature of this sickness as it manifests both within the individual and in the society. When the verse is thus construed, the definition of '*papañca*'

---

<sup>1</sup> *Yassindriyāni bhāvitāni - ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke nibbijha imaṃ parañca lokam - kālaṃ kaṃkhati bhāvito sa danto.*  
— Vs. 516

*Ninhāya sabbapāpakāni - ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke devamanussesu kappiyesu - kappaneti tamāhu nhātaḥ'ti*  
— Vs. 521

*Dubhayāni viceyya paṇḍarāni - ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca suddipaṇṇo Kaṇhā sukkaṃ upātivatto - paṇḍito tādi pavuccate tathattā,*  
— Vs. 526

*Asatañca satañca ṇatvā dhammaṃ - ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca sabbaloke devamanussesu pūjiyo so - saṅgaṃ jālaṃ aticca so munt'ti*  
— Vs. 527

*Yassassu lutāni bandhanāni - ajjhataṃ bahiddhā ca saṅgamūlaṃ sabbasaṅgamūlabandhanā pamutto - ājāniyo tādi pavuccate tathattā.*  
— Vs. 532

advanced by Dr. Saratchandra, can hardly be considered plausible.

### Relative Validity and Pragmatic Value of Concepts

That 'Knowing One' who is fully emancipated from the root of all internal and external sickness, is also called '*nippapañco*' or '*nippapañcarato*' ('one who delights in non-proliferation). Since he has cut off the tendencies towards the triple proliferation in concepts ('*chinnapapañco*') he has brought about its allayment ('*papañcavūpasama*'), its cessation ('*papañcanirodha*'). He has rid himself of concepts subjectively tinged with '*papañca*' ('*papañcasaṅkhāpahāna*'). The data of sense - experience, both percepts and concepts, which enter his mind, are more or less summarily dealt with, as we saw in the exhortation to Bahiya. They may enter through the portals of 'thought' (*vitakka*), but they never reverberate through the corridors of his mind as echoes of 'conceptual proliferation' by way of Craving, Conceit and Views (*tanhā-māna-diṭṭhi-papañca*). They never interfere with the sublime quietude reigning within the inner recesses of his mind. Freedom from '*papañca*' is the hall-mark of the emancipated one, however much thoughts, deliberations and 'thoughts of a great man' (*vitakka, parivitakka, mahāpurisa -vitakka*) he may be said to entertain. This gives the clue to the silence (*mona*) associated with the '*muni*' (the emancipated sage). The '*muni*' is silent not only when he does not speak; he is silent even when he does speak. Hence the seemingly incongruous statement of the Buddha: "Monks, I do not dispute with the world; it is the world that disputes with me."<sup>1</sup> Not only the Buddha, but the emancipated monk, too, has no dispute with the world but merely uses the worldly parlance without clinging to it. The *Madhupiṇḍika* and *Sakkapañha Suttas*, as well as several suttas like *Kalahavivāda*, *Cūlaviyūha* and *Mahāvīyūha* of the *Aṭṭhaka Vagga* of the *Sutta Nipāta*, lay particular stress on this strange aspect of the '*muni*'. Strange indeed it might appear, when in numerous suttas we find the Buddha and the arahants vigorously debating with the heretics and refuting their views. Yet even in the thick of the debate the sage is silent within, and holds himself aloof, since he has no axe to grind - has nothing to gain or lose by it. He has

---

<sup>1</sup> "*Nāhaṃ bhikkhave lokena vivadāmi, loko ca mayā vivadati*"

— S. N. III 138

no attachment (*taṇhā*) to his arguments, no conceit (*māna*) to be safeguarded and no views (*diṭṭhi*) to be dogmatically entertained.<sup>1</sup> Perhaps the most remarkable is the last mentioned. In many a context it is said that the *muni* has abandoned all views.<sup>2</sup> He has no views because he has got rid of **the point of view**, that is, **the illusion of the ego**. Hence he neither formulates nor proffers any views.<sup>3</sup> There

<sup>1</sup> *Pahīnamānassa na santi ganthā  
vidhūpitā mānaganthāssa sabbe  
sa vītivatto yamatam sumedho  
ahaṃ vadāmīti pi so vadeyya  
mamaṃ vadantīti pi so vadeyya  
loke samaññaṃ kusalo vidtvā  
vohāramattena so vohareyyāti.*

— S. N. I. 14 - 15

'For him who hath renounced them utterly  
Chains of illusion as to self or soul  
Exist no more, scattered are all such bonds.  
He, rich in wisdom hath escaped beyond  
Conceits and deemings of the errant mind.  
He might say thus: "I say"  
"They say it to me".  
So saying he; expert in usages  
Of men; aware of the worth of common names  
Would speak merely conforming to such use'.

<sup>2</sup> *Upayo hi dhammesu upeti vādaṃ  
anūpayam̐ kena kathaṃ vadeyya,  
attaṃ nirattaṃ na hi tassa atthi  
adhosi so diṭṭhim idheva sabbā.*

— Sn. Vs. 78 7

'One who has clingings enters into disputations amongst the dogmas. How and wherefore would one speak of him who is not obsessed with clingings. For by him there is nothing grasped or rejected. He has in this world shaken off every philosophical view'.

<sup>3</sup> *Na kappayanti na purekkharonti  
accantasuddhīti na te vadanti  
ādānaganthaṃ gathitaṃ visajja  
āsaṃ na kubbanti kuhiñci loke*

— Vs. 794

is, however, a widespread tendency to define the word '*diṭṭhi*' in such contexts strictly to mean the traditional list of sixty-two false views (*micchā-diṭṭhi*) as given in the *Brahmajāla Sutta* (D. N.). This tendency is evident in the commentaries, which, while defining '*taṇhā*' and '*māna*' in a more elementary form as to be comprehensive, take great care to be more specific in the case of '*diṭṭhi*'. This may be due partly to a complacent belief that the list of sixty-two comprehends all possible forms of *diṭṭhi*, and partly also to a desire to safeguard 'Right - view' (*sammā-diṭṭhi*). But it appears that this commentarial definition has created new problems. '*Diṭṭhi*' has thereby lost its fundamental significance as the deep-seated proclivity in the worldling's mind to be beguiled by concepts.<sup>1</sup> If by '*diṭṭhipapañca*' is meant merely the sixty-two false views, then it would be possible for the disciple of the Buddha to put an end to '*diṭṭhipapañca*' by virtue of the very fact that he has given up false views. But as we have shown above, it persists even in the disciple as the notion of an ego until he attains Nibbāna. Besides, the tendency towards '*diṭṭhi*' in the sense of dogmatic involvement in concepts, can also become manifest through *Sammā Diṭṭhi* in its theoretical aspect. It can assume the form of attachment to concepts which constitute '*Sammā Diṭṭhi*'. It is precisely this danger that the Buddha forewarns against, in the 'Parable of the Raft' in the *Alagaddūpama Sutta* (M. N. p. 134ff). Therein the Buddha declares in unmistakable terms that he is preaching the Dhamma which is comparable to a raft, just for the purpose of crossing over (the sea of *Samsāra*), and not for grasping dogmatically. After crossing over, even the '*dhammas*' have to be discarded, not to speak of the '*adhhammas*' (i. e. 'what does not pertain to Dhamma'). The parable which is so instructive as to merit analysis, runs thus:-

They neither formulate nor proffer theories. They do not say — 'this is the highest purity'. Giving up the bonds of attachment, they form no attachment anywhere in this world.'

<sup>1</sup> *Vide Supra* p. 17 - *diṭṭhi* (view), *diṭṭhisamudaya* (view-origin) *diṭṭhinirodha* (view-cessation), *diṭṭhinirodhagāminī paṭipadā* (the stepping of the way to view - cessation). cf. *Khema Sutta*.

— S. N. 111 126 ff.

"Monks, as a man going along a highway might see a great stretch of water, the hither bank dangerous and frightening, the farther bank secure, not frightening; but if there were not a boat for crossing by or a bridge across for going from the not-beyond to the beyond, this might occur to him. 'This is a great stretch of water; suppose that I, having collected grass, sticks, branches and foliage, and having tied a raft, depending on that raft and striving with hands and feet, should cross over safely to the beyond?' Then monks, that man, having collected grass ... and striving with hands and feet, might cross over safely to the beyond. To him crossed over, gone beyond, this might occur: 'Now this raft has been very useful to me. I, depending on this raft and striving with my hands and feet, crossed over safely to the beyond. Suppose now that I, having put this raft on my head, or having lifted it on to my shoulder, should proceed as I desire'. What do you think about this, monks? If that man does this, is he doing what should be done with the raft?"

"No, Lord".

"What should that man do, monks, in order to do what should be done with that raft? In this case, monks, it might occur to that man who has crossed over, gone beyond: 'Now this raft has been very useful to me. Depending on this raft and striving with my hands and feet, I have crossed over safely to the beyond. Suppose now that I, having beached this raft on dry ground or having submerged it under the water, should proceed as I desire?' In doing this, monks, that man would be doing what should be done with that raft. Even so, monks, is the Parable of the Raft, Dhamma, taught by me for crossing over, not for retaining. You, monks, by understanding the Parable of the Raft, should get rid even of right mental objects, all the more of wrong ones".

(....*Evameva kho bhikkhave kullūpamo mayā dhammo, desito nittharaṇatthāya no gahaṇatthāya. Kullūpamaṃ vo bhikkhave dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānantehi dhammā pi vo pahātabbā pageva adhammā*).

—M. L. S. I 173

Thus the 'Parable of the Raft' is a typical illustration of the relative and pragmatic value of the Dhamma. The raft is *improvised* out of the stray twigs and branches growing on the hither bank. By merely boarding the raft, by clutching at it, by decorating it with more twigs and branches one does not arrive at the farther bank. One has to exert oneself, having embarked for the beyond, and has gradually to cross over with the aid of the raft. Once he has reached the farther bank, he has to disembark; he has to abandon and disown the raft. He might, however, out of compassion instruct those living on the hither bank, as to how they should build similar rafts for themselves. But for his part, he no longer needs a raft. He has realised that the raft is useful and meaningful at the hither bank, as it is the product of the twigs and branches growing there. Similarly, 'Dhamma' which constitutes the theoretical content of *Sammā Diṭṭhi* is *improvised* out of the medium of language and logic in worldly parlance. By merely mastering it, by dogmatically clinging to it,<sup>1</sup> by clothing it with more concepts, one does not reach the Goal. One has to exert oneself spiritually, having mastered the Dhamma, in order to attain *Nibbāna*. Now, after his attainment, the pragmatic value of the Dhamma is lost for him, but as he is now convinced of its value for the suffering worldlings, he might preach it to them out of disinterested compassion. As for the truth value of the Dhamma, it has its validity from the worldling's point of view, as it is presented through the media familiar to him. Thus the truth value of Dhamma — of *Sammā Diṭṭhi* — pertains to the path, and it is essentially a **view** of the Goal and not the Goal itself. Dhamma or '*Sammā Diṭṭhi*', we may add, is neither more nor less true of the Goal,

<sup>1</sup> *Imañce tumhe bhikkhave diṭṭhiṃ evaṃ parisuddhaṃ evaṃ pariyodātaṃ alliyetha kelāyetha dhanāyetha mamāyetha, api nu tumhe bhikkhave kullūpamaṃ dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājāneyyātha nittharaṇatthāya no gahaṇatthāyāti—No hetam bhante.*

— M. N. I 260

"If you, monks, cling to, treasure, cherish, foster this view, thus purified, thus cleansed, then, monks, would you understand that the Parable of the Raft is dhamma taught for crossing over, not for retaining?" "No, Lord".

than the raft is of the farther bank. Being a form of *Diṭṭhi* or view, it presupposes a view-point, and it is, or ought to be, the view-point of the Ariyan disciple. As we have earlier pointed out, the emancipated sage has no view-point — indeed he needs none as he has reached the Goal. He has transcended all views of Truth and is in possession of a vision of it.<sup>1</sup> Thus we arrive at another paradox, as in the case of 'the silence' of the '*muni*'. The sage does not entertain any views not only when he refutes '*micchā-diṭṭhi*' (false view), but also when he preaches '*sammā diṭṭhi*' (right view). It may also be mentioned that '*Sammā Diṭṭhi*' itself embodies the seed of its own transcendence, as its purpose is to purge the mind of all views inclusive of itself. This dialectic aspect of the Dhamma, has had a staggering effect on the society to which it was first preached, and the Buddha himself refers to it in the *Alagaddūpama Sutta*.

*"Idha bhikkhu ekaccassa evaṃ diṭṭhi hoti: So loko so attā so pecca bhavissāmi, nicco dhuvo sassato aviparināmadhammo sassatisamaṃ tatheva ṭhassāmi. So suṇāti Tathāgatassa vā Tathāgatasāvakaṃ vā sabbesaṃ diṭṭhiṭṭhānādhiṭṭhāna pari-yuṭṭhānābhinivesānusayānaṃ samugghātāya sabba saṃkhāra-samathāya sabbūpadhipaṇinissaggāya taṇhakkhayāya virāgāya nirodhāya dhammaṃ desentassa. Tassa evaṃ hoti: Ucchijjissāmi nāma su, vinassissāmi nāma su, na su nāma bhavissāmi. So socati kilamati paridevati urattāliṃ kandati sammohaṃ āpajjati. Evaṃ kho bhikkhu ajjhataṃ asati paritassanā hotīti."*

M. N. I 137 - 8

"In this case, monk, the view occurs to someone: 'This is the world, this is the self, after dying I will become permanent, lasting, eternal, not liable to change, I will stand fast like unto the eternal'. He hears dhamma as it is being taught by the *Tathāgata* or by a disciple of the *Tathāgata*, for rooting out all resolve for bias, tendency, and addiction to view and causal relation, for tranquilising all the preparations, for casting away all attachment, for the destruction of craving, for

<sup>1</sup> *Diṭṭhiṅca anupagamma silavā dassanena sampanno.*

Sn. Vs. 152

dispassion, cessation, *Nibbāna*. It occurs to him thus: 'I will surely be annihilated, I will surely be destroyed, I will surely not be.' He grieves, mourns, laments, beats his breast and falls into disillusionment. Thus, monks, there comes to be anxiety about something subjective that does not exist."

M. L. S. I. 175 - 6

Thus '*Sammā Diṭṭhi*' aims at the utter eradication of all views together with propensities towards the same. The entire conceptual structure has to leave — though gradually — and in the final reckoning, even those concepts that have rendered us the greatest help in our spiritual endeavour, have to make their bow. As such, one must be extremely cautious in regard to concepts pertaining to *Sammā Diṭṭhi*. One might distinguish between the relatively true and false in theory, between the precise and the vague in terminology, between the scholastic and the wayward in phraseology, but one has to remember that as concepts they are all one. Nor should one seriously regard some concepts as absolute and inviolable categories in preference to others, and pack them up in water-tight cartons labelled '*paramattha*'. Indeed, he may regard some concepts as *paramattha* in the sense that they are more conducive to the attainment of the Goal than others — truer, more precise and more scholastic. In this connection we may also add that the word '*paramattha*' in its earlier and non-technical usage, actually meant the Highest Goal as the object of realisation, and any words tending towards that goal were called '*paramatthasaṃhita*'<sup>1</sup> ('connected with the Highest Goal'), irrespective of their precision or technicality. However the Buddha, for his part, was content to treat all of them as '*sammuti*'. For him, they were 'merely worldly conventions in common use, which he made use of, without clinging to them' (D. N. I. 202).

<sup>1</sup> *Uḷāraṇ vata me mātā - patodaṇ samavassari paramatthasaṃhitā gāthā - yathāpi anukampikā* — Thig. Vs. 210.

'O! splendid was the spur my mother used  
And no less merciful the chastisement  
She gave to me, even the rune she spoke  
Fraught with its burden of sublimest good.

P. E. B. I 104 - 5

One wonders whether this simple though profound attitude of the Buddha towards concepts, has been properly handed down in tradition, when for instance one comes across the following verse quoted approvingly by Buddhaghosa (source unknown) in his commentary to the *Anāṅga Sutta* of the *Majjhima Nikāya*.

*Duṇe saccāni akkhāsi - sambuddho vadatāṃ varo  
sammutiṃ paramatthaṅca - tatiyaṃ nūpalabbhati.  
Saṅketavacanaṃ saccaṃ – lokasammutikāraṇā  
paramatthavacanaṃ saccaṃ - dhammānaṃ bhūtakāraṇā  
tasmā vohārakusalassa - lokanāthassa satthuno  
sammutiṃ voharantassa - musāvado na jāyati.*

‘The Fully Enlightened One, the best of those who speak, declared two truths, the conventional and the absolute; there can be no third.

‘Words of symbolic nature are true by reason of their existence in worldly parlance. Words of absolute significance, are true by reason of the existence of elements.

‘Hence, even though the Lord of the World, the Teacher versed in worldly parlance, makes use of such conventional speech, there arises no offence of falsehood for him.’

If one can appreciate the significance of the term '*nippapañca*', one might realise that the Buddha could magnanimously afford to dispense with such naive defences as the above, against any charges of his having violated the fourth precept.

Yet another deviation from the original position at the commentarial level, is to be seen in Buddhaghosa's interpretation of a passage in the *Vinaya Chullavagga*, concerning the Buddha's attitude towards language. At Vin. II 139 it is said that two monks named Yamelu and Tekula, who were brahmins skilled in the elegancies of expression ('*kalyāyavācā kalyānavākkaraṇā*'), once complained to the Buddha that the word of the Buddha is being corrupted by those who, having entered the Order from various castes and tribes, were using their own dialects to study the Dhamma ( ... *Etarahi bhante bhikkhū nānānāmā nānā gottā nānājaccā nānākulā pabbajitā te sakāya niruttiyā buddhavacanaṃ dūṣenti*). Hence in order to stop that

corruption, they sought the Buddha's permission to apply the rigours of metre in fixing the text of the Buddha's words. (' ... *handā mayāṃ bhante buddhavacanaṃ chandaso āropemāti*'). The Buddha, however, rebuked them, saying that the proposed method was not conducive to the progress of the Dispensation, and having rejected the offer, made an 'allowance' for the liberal study of the Dhamma in one's own language, ('*Anujanāmi bhikkhave sakāya niruttiyā buddhavacanaṃ pariyāpunitum*'). Curiously enough, this last sentence in the *Chullavagga* passage, has been so interpreted by Buddhaghosa as to mean that the Buddha wished everyone to study the Dhamma in the Buddha's own language ('*Sakāya niruttiyāti ettha sakānirutti nāma sammāsambuddhena vuttappakāro Māghadhikavohāro*') (Smp, VI 1214).

Quite apart from the question of '*papañca*', the very context itself points to the fact that the Buddha never subscribed to such a view. The Buddha's rebuke of the two monks in rejecting their offer and the obvious implications of the two words '*sakāya niruttiyā*' ('one's own dialect': note that the same expression was used by the two monks) would go to prove that the Buddha *allowed* everyone to learn the Dhamma in his own language, as a measure conducive to its dissemination.<sup>1</sup> How liberal the Buddha was, with regard to the dialects in worldly usage, may be clearly seen in the following passage of the *Araṇavibhanga Sutta* (M. N.)

---

<sup>1</sup> This Chv. passage has been variously interpreted by modern scholars. Rhys Davids and Oldenberg, in the *Vinaya Translations* (Vin. Texts. S. B. E. XX. p. 150fn.) take the words (*chandaso āropema*' as a reference to earlier Sanskrit, thus agreeing with *Buddhaghosa* ('*chandaso āropemāti vedāṃ viya sakkatabhāsāya vācanāmaggaṃ āropema*' — Smp). But they translate the expression rendering '*chandaso*' as (Sanskrit) verse. 'In rendering the Buddha's allowance' to monks in which the words '*sakāya niruttiyā*' occur, they deviate from the commentarial tradition more distinctly: 'I allow you, O Bhikkhus, to learn the word of the Buddha each in his own dialect'.

Oldenberg, while holding that the passage sanctions everyone 'to learn the sacred texts in his own language', doubts its authenticity when he says: -This story will scarcely induce us to believe that such a decree proceeded from the Buddha himself'. (Vin. I, Intro. XLVIII).

*Janapadaniruttiṃ nābhiveseyya, samaññaṃ nātidhāveyyāti iti kho panetaṃ vuttaṃ. Kiñcetaṃ paṭicca vuttaṃ? Kathaṅca bhikkhave janapadaniruttiyā ca abhiniveso hoti samaññāya ca atisāro? Idha bhikkhave, tadevekaccesu janapadesu Pāti'ti sañjānanti, Pattan'ti*

---

We feel, on the contrary, that this decree is quite in keeping with the Buddha's attitude towards dialects.

Geiger, who also takes '*chandās*' to mean either Sanskrit or Sanskrit verse, fully endorses Buddhaghosa's peculiar rendering of '*sakāya niruttiyā*'. He proceeds to conclude that even during the lifetime of the Buddha, there was a strong tendency to preserve unchanged the Buddha's teachings not only as to its content but also with regard to its external form, and that according to this passage the Buddha encourages that tendency. He even observes that 'neither the two monks nor Buddha himself could have thought of preaching in different dialects in different cases.'

— *Pali Literature and Language*,  
Intro. p. 7

Miss Horner likewise grants the possibility that '*chandās*' can mean Sanskrit, but she considers that the intention of the two monks is to 'give the speech of the Awakened One in metrical form'. Buddhaghosa's specification that the expression '*Sakāya niruttiyā*' in the latter instance (Note that Bdg. explains that expression *after* commenting on '*chandaso āropema*') means the Buddha's own dialect *Māgadhi*, has been generalised by Miss Horner. Thus she renders the request of the two monks: 'At present, Lord, monks of various names, various clans, various social strata, have gone forth from various families; these corrupt the speech of the Awakened One in using *his own* dialect'. (Books of Discipline 5., S.B.B. XX 194). The issue now seems to have become rather complicated.

It is very likely that the intention of Yamelu and Tekula was to safeguard the sanctity or purity of the Buddha's words from possible infiltration of dialectical variants and phonetic decay. Hence the remedy cannot lie in merely translating the *Buddhavacana* into Sanskrit. Those two monks probably had a sophisticated attitude

*sañjānanti, Vitthan'ti sañjananti, Sarāvan'ti sañjānanti, Dhāropan'ti sañjānanti, Poṇanti sañjānanti, Pisīlan'ti sañjānanti. Iti yathā yathā naṃ tesu tesu janapadesu sañjānanti, tathā tathā thāmasā parāmassa abhinivissa voharati: Idameva saccaṃ moghaṃ aññanti. Evaṃ kho bhikkhave janapadaniruttiyā ca abhiniveso hoti samaññāya ca atisāro. Kathaṅca bhikkhave janapadaniruttiyā ca anabhiniveso hoti samaññāya ca anatisāro? Idha bhikkhave tadevekaccesu .... sañjānanti. Iti yathā yathā naṃ tesu tesu janapadesu sañjānanti. Idam kira'me āyasmanto sandhāya voharanti'ti tathā tathā voharati aparāmasaṃ. Evaṃ kho bhikkhave janapadaniruttiyā ca anabhiniveso hoti, samaññāya ca anatisāro .....* (M. N. III 234 ff.)

"When it is said: 'One should not affect the dialect of the countryside, one should not deviate from recognised parlance', in reference to what is it said? And what, monks, is affectation of the dialect of the countryside and what is departure from recognised parlance? In this case, monks, in different districts they know (the different words): *Pāti.....Patta.....Vittha.....Sarāva... Dhāropa..... Poṇa..... Pisīla*.<sup>1</sup> Thus as they know the word as this or that in these various districts, so does a person, obstinately clinging to it and adhering to it, explain: 'This indeed is the truth, all else is falsehood.' Thus, monks, is affectation of the dialect of the countryside and departure from parlance. And what monks, is non-affectation of the dialect of the countryside and non-departure from parlance? In this case, monks, in different districts they know (the different words): *Pāti.....Patta.....Vittha.....Sarāva... Dhāropa..... Poṇa..... Pisīla*, yet although they know the word as this or that in these various districts a person does not cling to it but explains: 'These venerable ones definitely express it thus.' Thus, monks, is non-affectation of the dialect of the countryside and non-departure from recognised parlance."  
— M. L. S. III 282

---

towards language (note the epithets '*kalyāṇavācā*' '*kalyāṇavākkaraṇā*'), which enthused them to seek the Buddha's permission to stereotype the '*Buddhavacana*' by resorting to metrical devices such as rhyme and accent. This was an attempt to bring the '*Buddha vacana*' in its external form nearer the Vedic texts by

<sup>1</sup> All these are dialectical variants for the word 'bowl'.

The value of the above exhortation would be greatly enhanced by the circumstance that herein the Buddha is describing one of the steps of the 'peaceful path' (*araṇapaṭipadā*) which he recommends for the monks. This path is contrasted with the 'war-like path' (*saraṇapaṭipadā*), an instance of which can be seen in the above passage itself when it refers to the dogmatic and extremist attitude towards dialects. The Ariyan disciple should avoid this latter, and should cultivate instead a moderate and tolerant attitude as regards the question of dialects. What inculcates in him such a liberal spirit, is the very dialectical implications behind the Parable of the Raft.

*Sammā diṭṭhi* (right view) may be regarded as unique among all forms of '*diṭṭhis*' owing to its peculiar dialectical element. A dramatic illustration of this unique character is reflected in the apparently drab and uninspiring opening of the *Madhupiṇḍika Sutta*. There we found *Daṇḍapāṇi*, the *Sākyan*, questioning the Buddha in order to ascertain the 'theory' he preached. The Buddha's reply, which we have discussed earlier, was rather periphrastic. *Daṇḍapāṇi* would have expected, like most of us, to get a reply in the form of some short label of a dogma. He was, therefore, dissatisfied with the Buddha's reply which might have appeared to him as a piece of verbal *papañca*; and so he shook his confused head, raised his puzzled eye-brows, grimaced and went away. One might be tempted to show a similar response to the Buddha's reply if one fails to appreciate its deeper implications. The Buddha had no theory to be declared other than that he had put an end to all theories, and all proclivities towards them. His purpose as a teacher was to indicate the path to the same Goal that he has attained.

One of the most important among those suttas which afford us a deeper insight into the enlightened attitude towards concepts, is the *Mūlapariyāya Sutta* — quite deservedly counted as the first in the *Majjhima Nikāya*. It portrays for us the 'Weltanschauung' of the following types of individuals.

I. *The uninstructed average person*, taking no account of the noble ones, unskilled in the dhamma of the noble ones, untrained in the dhamma of the noble ones taking no account of the good men, unskilled in the dhamma of the good men, untrained in the dhamma of the good men (*assutavā puthujjano ariyānaṃ*

*adassāvī ariyadhammassa akovido ariyadhamme avinito sappurisānaṃ adassāvī sappurisadhammassa akovido sappurisadhamme avinito*).

II. *The monk who is a learner*, not attained to perfection, but who lives striving for the incomparable security from bondage (*.....bhikkhu sekho appattamānaso anuttaraṃ yogakkhemaṃ patthayamāno viharati*).

III. *The monk who is perfected* and free from cankers, who has lived the holy-life, done what was to be done, laid down the burden, attained his Goal, whose fetters of becoming are utterly worn away, who is freed by perfect profound knowledge (*....bhikkhu arahaṃ khināsavo katakaraṇīyo ohitabhāro anuppattasadattho parikkhīṇabhavasaññojano sammadaññā vimutto*).

IV. *The Tathāgata*, the perfected-one, fully self-awakened (*Tathāgato arahaṃ sammāsambuddho*).

Of these four types, the last two may be conveniently treated as one since their 'Weltanschauung' is the same, and thus we have here three basic types. In this sutta, the Buddha sets out to preach the fundamental mode of all phenomena' (*sabbadhammamūlapariyāyaṃ vo bhikkhave desissāmi*). He enumerates a list of twenty four concepts and explains the attitude of the above-mentioned individual types towards those concepts. The list includes the following: earth, fire, air, beings, devas, *Pajāpati*, *Brahmā*, the Radiant Ones, the Lustrous Ones, the *Vehapphala* (Brahmas), the Overlord, the realm of infinite space, the realm of infinite consciousness, the realm of nothingness, the realm of neither-perception-nor-non-perception. the seen, the heard, the sensed, the cognised, unity, diversity, universality, Nibbāna (*paṭhavi, āpo, tejo, vāyo bhūtā, devā, Pajāpati, Brahmā, Ābhassarā. Subhakiṇhā, Vehapphalā Abhibhū, Ākāsaṇācayatanam, Viññānaṇcāyatanaṃ, Ākiñcāññāyatanaṃ, Nevasaññānāsaññāyatanaṃ, diṭṭham, sutam, mutam, viññātam, ekattam, nānattam, sabbam, nibbānam*).

For all the apparent diversity among these terms, they are all of a piece as 'concepts'. Now, the attitude of the uninstructed average person towards them is described thus:

*Idha bhikkhave, assutavā puthujjano... paṭhavim paṭhavito*



*sañjānāti, paṭhaviṃ paṭhavito saññatvā, paṭhaviṃ maññati, paṭhaviyā maññati. paṭhavito maññati, paṭhaviṃ meti maññati paṭhaviṃ abhinandati, taṃ kissa hetu, apariññātāṃ tassāti vadāmi.*

*Āpam āpato .....nibbānaṃ nibbānato ....*

"Herein, monks an uninstructed average person .... cognises earth as earth; having cognised earth as earth, he imagines earth (as such), he imagines: 'on the earth'; he imagines: 'from the earth'; he imagines: 'earth is mine'. He rejoices in earth. What is the reason for this? I say that it is not well comprehended by him." (The same is repeated for 'water' down to '*Nibbāna*'.)

The monk who is a 'learner' has the following attitude:

*Yo pi so bhikkhave bhikkhu sekho ... so pi paṭhaviṃ paṭhavito abhijānāti, paṭhaviṃ paṭhavito abhiññāya paṭhaviṃ mā maññi, paṭhaviyā mā maññi paṭhavito mā maññi paṭhaviṃ meti mā maññi. paṭhaviṃ mā abhinandi, taṃ kissa hetu, pariññeyyaṃ tassāti vadāmi,*

*Āpam āpato ..... nibbānaṃ nibbānato ....*

"Monks, whatever monk is a learner .... he understands through higher knowledge earth as earth; knowing earth as earth, let him not imagine earth (as such); let him not imagine: 'on the earth'; let him not imagine.: 'from the earth'; let him not imagine: 'earth is mine'; let him not rejoice in earth. What is the reason for this? I say it is because it should be well comprehended by him ....."

The attitude of the Arahant and of the Tathāgata may be understood by the following passage (*mutatis mutandis*):

*Yo pi so bhikkhave bhikkhu araham khīnāsavo .. ... so pi paṭhaviṃ paṭhavito abhijānāti. paṭhaviṃ paṭhavito abhiññāya paṭhaviṃ na maññati. paṭhaviyā na maññati, paṭhavito na maññati, paṭhaviṃ me'ti na maññati, paṭhaviṃ nābhinandati, taṃ kissa hetu, pariññātāṃ tassāti vadāmi .....*

*Āpam āpato' ... nibbānaṃ nibbānato ...*

"Monks, whatever monk is one perfected... ..he too understands

through higher knowledge earth as earth: knowing earth as earth, he does not imagine earth (as such); he does not imagine: 'on the earth'; he does not imagine 'from the earth'; he does not imagine: 'earth is mine'; he does not rejoice in earth. What is the reason for this? I say it is because it has been well comprehended by him."

The average person uninstructed in the Dhamma, with mere sensory perception to guide him, cognises those twenty-four concepts as objects of thought. Having so cognised, he proceeds to imagine in terms of them in accordance with the flexional pattern and delights in those concepts. This is because he lacks clear comprehension. He is misled by naive sense-experience and by his tendencies towards '*taṇhā-māna-ditṭhi-papañca*'. Having evolved a concept he proceeds to make it pliable and flexible. He resorts to *inflexion* which is an elementary feature in language. By establishing a correspondence between the grammar of language and the grammar of nature, he sets about weaving networks of '*papañca*'. The monk who is earnestly training himself on the path to *Nibbāna* has a refined and higher knowledge<sup>1</sup> of those concepts in accordance with the Dhamma. He therefore endeavours to refrain from egoistic imaginings based on the flexional pattern. Of him, it is said that he might gain comprehension by his training. The Arahants and the Tathāgata, who have intuitively gained the higher knowledge, are not beguiled by the flexional or grammatical patterns of concepts so as to indulge in egoistic

<sup>1</sup> As regards the distinction of meaning between '*abhijānāti*' and '*parijānāti*' in this context, reference may be made to the definition of the two terms *paññā* and *viññāna* given in the *Mahā Vedalla Sutta* (M. N I. 293): '*Yā cāvuso paññā yañca viññānaṃ imesaṃ dhammānaṃ saṃsaṭṭhānaṃ no visaṃsaṭṭhānaṃ, paññā bhāvetabbā viññānaṃ pariññeyyaṃ idaṃ nesaṃ nānākaraṇaṃ.*

"That which is intuitive wisdom, your reverence, and that which is discriminative consciousness among these states that are associated, not dissociated, intuitive wisdom is to be developed, discriminative consciousness is to be comprehended. This is the difference between them."

imaginings. Theirs is the full comprehension.

Though the sutta makes no mention of the term '*papañca*', Buddhaghosa has rightly discerned its relevance to the sutta. Hence he draws attention to it thus:

*Paṭhavim paṭhavito saññatvāti so taṃ paṭhavim evaṃ viparī-tasaññāya saññānitvā; 'saññānidānā hi papañcasankhā'ti vacanato aparabhāge thāmappattehi taṃhā māna diṭṭhipapañcehi idha maññanānāmena vutthehi maññati, kappeti, vikappeti, nānappakārato aññathā gaṇhāti. Tena vuttam paṭhavim maññatīti.*

" 'Having cognised earth as earth' — this means that he (the average person), having thus cognised earth in the form of a perverted sense-impression, afterwards imagines, speculates, fabricates mentally and in diverse ways grasps it wrongly with the gross '*papañcas*' of craving, conceit and views (herein called *maññanā*) as it has been said '*saññānidānāhi papañcasankhā*'."

Buddhaghosa explains each of the different forms of '*maññanā*' given in the sutta with reference to one or more of the three *papañcas*. He is therefore somewhat puzzled at the concluding phrase '*paṭhavim abhinandati*', which he treats as a repetition. Observing that the Theras of Old ('*Porāṇā*') have not given any explanation for this 'repetition', he ventures to give his own:

*Paṭhavim abhinandati'ti vuttappakārameva paṭhavim taṃhā diṭṭhīhi abhinandati assādeti parāmasati cāti vuttam hoti. Paṭhavim maññatīti eteneva etasmim atthe siddhe kasmā evam vuttanti ce? Avicāritametam Porāṇehi; ayam pana me attano mati: desanāvīlāsato vā ādīnavadassanato vā.....*

" 'He rejoices in earth'—that is to say that he rejoices in, cherishes and clings to earth with *taṃhā*, *diṭṭhi* and the like, as it has been already explained. When the phrase 'he imagines earth (as such)' by itself conveys this sense, what is the justification for the above phrase? This point has not been commented upon by the *Porāṇas*. This is my personal opinion: (The justification is) that it reflects the Buddha's discursive style in preaching or else emphasises the evil effects (of *maññanā*)."

The concluding phrase appears as a repetition because Buddhaghosa himself has explained the preceding forms of *maññanā* from the standpoint of *taṃhā*-, *māna*- and *diṭṭhi-papañca*. But when we regard those four forms of *maññanā* as an illustration of the worldling's commitment to the grammatical structure, as we have indicated above, the problem of repetition or redundancy will not arise. On the contrary, the sutta would thereby gain in depth and significance. The aim of the Buddha in preaching this sutta is to point out the elementary modes in which all phenomena present themselves to the mind of the four individual types (*sabbadhammamūlapariyāyam*). The grammatical structure of the language is the most elementary mode of presentation. It is here that the concepts are invested with the necessary flexibility and set on their tracks to proliferate as *taṃhā*, *māna* and *diṭṭhi 'papañca*'. The uninstructed average person succumbs to it; the disciple training on the Ariyan Path resists it; and the Emancipated One transcends it.

The commentary tells us that the immediate purpose for which the Buddha preached this sutta was to dispel the conceit of five hundred monks who were proud of their theoretical knowledge (*pariyatti*) of the Dhamma. It also says that their conceit was due largely to the fact that they were formerly Brahmins, well versed in the three Vedas. Although the sutta is not explicit as to the authenticity of this tradition, it is probably true, for the sutta ends with this unusual sentence: '*Idamavoca bhagavā na te bhikkhū bhagavato bhāsitaṃ abhinanduntī*' (Thus spoke the Buddha, and those monks did not rejoice at his words'). In view of the fact that we hardly find any other sutta of this proportion which was not rejoiced over by the monks to whom it was specifically addressed, the commentarial tradition may be granted. As we have shown above, the sutta in fact exposes the nature of the totality of concepts and their syntactical relations. Concepts - be they material or spiritual, worldly or transcendental - are not worthy of being grasped dogmatically. They are not to be treated as ultimate categories and are to be discarded in the course of the spiritual endeavour. If this is the true significance of the sutta, then there is no wonder that those conceited monks were crestfallen on hearing it. The commentary, however, tells us that they were displeased because they **did not** understand this abstruse discourse. On the contrary, we might say that they were displeased because they

**did** understand the discourse. Hence it is not the abstruseness of the discourse that dispelled their conceit, as the commentary asserts, but it is the very **dialectical insinuations** underlying it that humbled them.<sup>1</sup> It is no doubt a disquieting revelation to most of us and the immediate reaction cannot be a happy one. Even Buddhaghosa seems to have been rather reluctant to appreciate fully the implications of this sutta, and we have a curious hint as to this in his comment on the word 'Nibbāna' occurring as the last in the list of twenty-four concepts. While commenting he hastens to add that 'Nibbāna' here refers only to the five heretical concepts of *Nibbāna*. This narrowing down of the meaning is obviously incongruous with the spirit of the sutta.<sup>2</sup> It, however, reflects a desperate attempt, on the part of the commentarial tradition, to salvage the orthodox concept of *Nibbāna*,

---

<sup>1</sup> How tenaciously the Upaniṣadic soul-tradition clung to this flexional pattern, can be seen at Brh. 3.7.3. ff., where a list of concepts is so moulded in that pattern as to posit an Immortal Inner Controller.

"*Yah prthivyāṁ tiṣṭhan prthivyā antarah, yaṁ prthivī na ved yasya prthivī sarīraṁ. yah prthiviṁ antaro yamayati, esa ta ātmāntaryarīrat.*"

"He who inhabits the earth, yet is within the earth, whom the earth does not know, whose body the earth is, and who controls the earth from within - He is your *Self*, the Inner Controller, the Immortal." The other concepts in that list are; water, fire, sky air, heaven, sun, quarters, moon and stars, space, darkness, light, beings, breath, speech, eye, ear, mind, skin, intellect, organ of generation. If the more or less parallel formulation in the *Mūlapariyāya Sutta* is the Buddha's challenge to this Upaniṣadic doctrine in particular, the impact of the sutta on those 500 monks becomes all the more understandable. (See also. S. N. IV 21 ff)

The significance of this parallelism was pointed out to me by Ven. Nyāṇaponika Mahāthera.

<sup>2</sup> See Keith. *Buddhist Philosophy in India and Ceylon*, p., 215

so dear to our religious consciousness.<sup>1</sup> That the emancipated sage (*muni*) no longer clings even to such concepts as '*Nibbāna*' or 'detachment' (*virāgo*) is clearly indicated in the following verse of the *Sutta Nipāta*:

*Sīmātigo brāhmaṇo tassa natthi  
ñatvā va disvā va samuggahītaṁ  
na rāgarāgi na virāgaratto  
tassīdha natthi param uggahītaṁ.*

— v, 795.

"For the Brahmin (the Muni) who has transcended all bounds, there is nothing that is grasped by knowing or by seeing. He is neither attached to attachment nor is he attached to detachment.<sup>2</sup> In this world, he has grasped nothing as the highest."

The *Mūlapariyāya Sutta* does not stand alone when it stresses the value of developing a detached attitude to all concepts, so that one can disown them without regrets when the occasion demands it. It was the burden of the *Alagaddūpama Sutta* which we have discussed above. It is also the moral that rings through the phrase: '*Sabbe dhammā nālaṁ abhinivesāya*' (M. N., I 255). (To render it simply: "**Nothing** is worth clinging to"). The theme comes up again in the following verse of the Dhammapada:

*Sabbe dhammā anattā'ti  
yadā paññāya passati  
atha nibbindati dukkhe  
esa maggo visuddhiyā*

— v. 279.

"When one sees with insight that everything is not-self, then one finds no relish in all that is Ill. This is the path to purity."

Thus we arrive at the uncompromising position that as a concept '*Nibbāna*' is no more real or absolute than other concepts. It merely symbolises conceptually the transcendental experience in negative

---

<sup>1</sup> See '*Amatārammaṇakathā*' - Kvu, IX 2 pg. 401 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahāniddeśa* however explains '*rāgarattā*' as 'those attached to the five kinds of sense-pleasures' and '*virāgarattā*' as 'those who are attached to the attainments in the Realms of Form and Formless Realms.' (Nid. I, 100). See S. N. III 90.

terms. All definitions of *Nibbāna* have validity only from the worldling's point of view and take the form of negations of various aspects of worldly existence either explicitly or implicitly.<sup>1</sup> Now, if the most predominant and pervasive characteristic of the world is prolific conceptualization, it follows that the transcendental experience of *Nibbāna* could be defined as the 'non-prolific' (*nippapañca*) or the cessation, the appeasement, of conceptual proliferation (*papañca-nirodha*; *papañca-vūpasama*). Hence it is that very often in those suttas which refer to the consciousness of the Arahants, we are baffled by a string of negations in some form or other. The consciousness of the Arahant is said to be so ineffable that even the gods and Brahmas are incapable of discovering its basis or support.<sup>2</sup> He has the ability to attain to a unique *Samādhi*<sup>3</sup> in which he has no recourse to any of the data of sense experience normally considered essential for a *jhāna* or *samādhi*.

*So neva paṭhavim nissāya jhāyati, na āpaṃ nissāya jhāyati, na*

<sup>1</sup> Thirty-three synonyms are given at S. N. IV 368ff (*Asaṇ khata Saṇ y .*), *Nibbāna* being one of them.

<sup>2</sup> 'Evaṃ vimuttacittam kho bhikkhave bhikkhum sa-indā devā sa-brahmakā sa-pajāpatikā anvesam nādhigacchanti, 'idam nissitam tathāgatassa viññānan'ti. Tam kissa hetu? Diṭṭhevāham bhikkhave dhamme tathāgataṃ ananuvejjo'ti vadāmi.'  
— M. N. I 140, *Alagaddūpama S.*

"Monks, when a monk's mind is freed thus, the devas -those with Indra, those with Brahma, those with *Pajāpati* — do not succeed in their search so as to conclude: 'It is on this that the consciousness of the Tathāgata depends.' What is the reason for this? I, monks, declare that a Tathāgata is untraceable here and now."

— M. L. S., I 179.

<sup>3</sup> Buddha called this *samādhi* '*aññā-phala*', the 'Fruit-of Knowledge' (A. N. IV 430); or '*Ānantarika*', 'Immediacy' (Sn226). Commentaries often refer to this as '*arahattaphala-samādhi*.' Cf. '*Samādhinā tena samo na vijjati*', Sn. 226. 'A concentration like unto that, there is not.' See also ib. 225; D. N. II. 231 ff.; S. N. I. 18.

*tejam ... na vāyam ..... na ākāsānañcāyatanam .... na viññāṇaṇcāyatanam .... na ākiñcaññāyatanam. . . . na nevasaññā nāsaññāyatanam ..... na idhalokam .....na paralokam .....yampidam diṭṭham sutam mutam viññātam pattam pariyesitam anuvicaritam manasā, tampi nissāya na jhāyati, jhāyati ca pana. Evaṃ jhāyiṇca pana Sandha bhadrām purisājāniyam sa-indā devā sabrahmakā sapajāpatikā ārakā'va namassanti.*

*Namo te purisājāñña — namo te purisuttama  
yassa te nābhijānāma — yampi nissāya jhāyati.'*  
— A. N. V. 324-5

"He muses not dependent on earth, water, fire, air, the realm of infinity of space, the realm of infinity of consciousness, the realm of nothingness, the realm of neither-perception-nor-nonperception; he muses not dependent on this world ..... on the world beyond.... on whatever is seen, heard, sensed, cognized, attained, sought after, traversed by the mind — dependent on all that he muses not, and yet he *does* muse. Moreover, Sandha, to him thus musing, the devas with Indra, with Brahma and with *Pajāpati* even from afar bow down, saying:

<sup>1</sup> *Yesam sannicayo natthi — ye pariññātabhojanā  
suññato animitto ca — vimokkho yesa gocaro  
ākāseva sakuntānam — gati tesam durannayā.*  
— Dhp. 92

"To whom there are no accumulations, who have comprehended the nutriments, and whose range is the deliverance of the 'void' and the 'signless' — their track is hard to trace as that of birds in the sky."

The commentary explains '*gati*' by citing various forms of possible *rebirth*, but the word does not necessarily refer to 'bourne'. Here the reference is not to the after-death state of Arahants, as is commonly supposed. It merely suggests the 'void' and 'signless' *range* (*gocara*) of movement or the extraordinary mental compass of the Arahants, which defies all definition.

Similar allusions to this transcendental consciousness are to be found in the verses No. 93, 179 and 180 (Dhp.).



'We worship thee, thou thoroughbred of men,  
 We worship thee, most excellent of men.  
 For what it is whereon depending thou  
 Art musing - 'that we cannot comprehend'."

—G. S., V. 206

The emphatic note with which it is said that although the Arahant has excluded from his mind all those possible objects of musing (or meditating), yet he *does* muse, is highly significant. In a number of thematic suttas<sup>1</sup> we find monks — notably Ānanda among them — questioning the Buddha and Sāriputta about the possibility of such a meditation. The question almost always smacks of doubt and wonderment "Could there be" — it runs — "such a *samādhi* in which a monk is neither conscious of earth nor of water .... and yet is conscious?"<sup>2</sup> And the reply is always, "There could be such a *samādhi* wherein a monk is neither conscious of earth nor of ..... and *nevertheless is* conscious." A counter question follows as a rule: "In what manner and how, Lord, could there be .....?" — in reply to which some indication as to the nature of the *samādhi* is given. For instance, we find the Venerable Sāriputta declaring, in reply to Venerable Ānanda, that once he attained to such a *samādhi* when he was at the Andhavana, and he proceeds to explain it thus:

*'Bhavanirodho nibbānaṃ, bhavanirodho nibbānanti' ti kho me āvuso aññā va saññā uppajjati, aññā va saññā nirujjhati. Seyyathapi āvuso sakalikaggissa jhāyamānassa aññā va acci uppajjati, aññā va acci nirujjhati, evameva kho me āvuso 'bhavanirodho nibbānaṃ bhavanirodho nibbāna'ti aññā va saññā uppajjati aññā va saññā nirujjhati, bhavanirodho nibbānaṃ saññā ca panāhaṃ āvuso tasmim̐ samaye aho sin'ti— A. N., V. 9f.*

"One perception arose in me: 'Cessation of becoming is *Nibbāna*.' Another perception faded out in me: 'Cessation of

<sup>1</sup> A. N., IV 427, V 7,8,318,319,321,353ff.

<sup>2</sup> The words '*saññā*' (conscious), '*jhāyati*' (meditates, muses), '*manasikaroti*' (pays attention to) are used more or less synonymously in these passages.

becoming is *Nibbāna*' - . Just as, your reverence from a fire of splinters, one flame arises and another flame fades out, even so in me one perception arose: 'Cessation of becoming is *Nibbāna*' and another perception faded out in me: 'Cessation of becoming is *Nibbāna*'. Yet, at the same time your reverence, I consciously perceived."

—G. S., V. 7.

The unique feature of this *samādhi* is its very fluxional character. In it there is; no such fixity as to justify a statement that it 'depends on' (*nissāya*) some object (*ārammaṇa*) as its support — hence the frustration of gods and men who seek out the basis of the Tathāgata's consciousness. Normally, the *jhānas* are characterised by an element of fixity on which consciousness finds a footing or a steadying point (*viññāṇaṭṭhiti*). It is on this very fixity that the illusion of the ego thrives. In the above *jhāna* of the emancipated one, however, the ego has melted away in the fire of wisdom which sees the cosmic process of arising and cessation. Not only has the concept "I" (*papañca par excellence*) undergone combustion, but it has also ignited the data of sensory experience in their entirety. Thus in this *jhāna* of the Arahant, the world of concepts melts away in the intuitional bonfire of universal impermanence.<sup>1</sup>

This brings us to the classic phrase<sup>2</sup> which refers to the Buddha's attainment of wisdom (*paññā*) as a kind of illumination (*āloka*). It is often said that in that illumination the darkness of ignorance perished (*tamo vihato*). The concepts which we have concocted, and which are thus invested with varying degrees of

<sup>1</sup> cf. '*avitakka-samādhi*', Ud. 71; '*avitakka-jhayi*', S. N. I 126: '*avitakkaṃ-samāpanno*', Sāriputta Thag; '*jhāyati anupādano*', Bhaddiya Thag.; Sn. v. 7.

<sup>2</sup> "*Idaṃ dukkhaṃ ariyasaccaṃ'ti me bhikkhave pubbe ananussutesu dhammesu cakkhuṃ udapādi ñāṇaṃ udapādi paññā udapādi, vijjā udapādi, āloko udapādi*". (S, N, V 422) — "This is the Noble Truth of Suffering' — thus, O monks, in regard to things unheard of in tradition, there arose in me the eye, the insight, the wisdom, the knowledge, the light." "*Obhāsajātaṃ phalagaṃ cittaṃ* - 'the mind lustre-become' and 'gone-to-Fruit'"; Nandiya Thag. (Thag. 1, 3, 5).

substantiality or stability, cannot stand up to the radiance of wisdom. Hence they pale away and shrink into insignificance, as do twilight stars on the advent of the moon, or the moon at sunrise. Yet, in its lustre, wisdom supersedes even the sun, for the suttas tell us that even the latter pales before it:

*Yattha āpo ca paṭhavi - tejo vāyo na gādhati  
Na tattha sukkā jotanti - ādicco nappakāsati  
Na tattha candimā bhāti - tamo tattha na vijjati  
Yadā ca attanā vedi - muni monena brāhmaṇo  
Atha rūpā arūpā ca - sukhadukkhā pamuccati.*

— Ud. 9

*"There, where earth, water, fire, and wind no footing find,  
There are the stars not bright, nor is the sun resplendent,  
No moon shines there, there is no darkness seen.  
And then when he, the Arahant, has in his wisdom seen,  
From well and ill, from form and formless, is he freed,"<sup>1</sup>*

The above 'Verse of Uplift' (*Udāna*) occurring at the end of the *Bāhiya Sutta* was uttered by the Buddha with reference to Bāhiya who — as we saw above — met with a sudden death, having attained Arahantship. At the Buddha's behest, monks cremate his body and erect a cairn (*thūpa*) in honour of him, and at last question the Buddha regarding details of Bāhiya's rebirth. Then he revealed the fact that Bāhiya, being of mature wisdom, attained the goal with the minimum of instruction in the Dhamma. The verse quoted above which the Buddha thereupon utters is actually an inspired utterance of admiration at Bāhiya's unique feat and not a part of the Buddha's reply proper. The monks, when they raised that question, were not aware of the fact that Bāhiya died as an Arahant. Hence the above reply would have proved sufficient for them. These facts seem to have been overlooked by the commentator Dhammapāla who takes the verse to be a description of the actual '*anupādisesa Nibbāna-dhātu*' (*Nibbāna* with no clinging left'), as the destiny of Bāhiya after his death. He seems to imply that the Buddha is here elaborating on that aspect of *Nibbāna* in reply to those monks. Consequently, such terms as water,

<sup>1</sup> See *Intro. to Kevaddha Sutta (Tr.)* in D. B. I.

earth, fire, air, stars, sun, moon and darkness, assume a certain degree of grossness and banality in his interpretation. It is said that water, earth, fire, and air do not find a footing in that '*Nibbāna-element*,' and that neither the planets nor the mighty sun nor the charming moon appear therein to illuminate it. His explanation of the phrase 'there is no darkness seen' (*tamo tattha na vijjati*) exposes the inadequacy of his interpretation. He asserts that the phrase serves to forestall a possible doubt that if all these luminary bodies were not there in that '*Nibbāna* element', it would be utterly dark like the purgatory. Now, to return to the imagery of the darkness of ignorance and the radiance of wisdom, we may say that it is precisely because there is no darkness (in the emancipated mind) that the stars, the sun and the moon *do not shine*. They have faded away,<sup>1</sup> their lustre having been superseded by the intuitional effulgence.<sup>2</sup> Be it noted that the three verbs used in connection with the stars, the sun and the moon, convey the sense that they do not *shine* there — not that they are physically non-existent in any mysterious realm beyond. Thus the allusion here, with its touch of imagery (a feature as apt as it is recurrent in such inspired verses), is most probably to that transcendental consciousness of the *living* Arahant in which the *concepts* such as earth, water, fire, and air, stars, sun, moon, darkness (of ignorance), realms of form and formless realms, happiness and unhappiness, have lost their 'substantiality' in more than one sense.

After what has been said above, we are now poised to examine the following much vexed verse occurring in the *Kevaddha Sutta*. (D.N.)

<sup>1</sup> The sense of 'fading away' or 'decolouration' implicit in the word '*virāgo*' (detachment).  
— See M. N. III. 240 ff., S. N. I. 23 5 III. 27; Itiv. 57.

<sup>2</sup> "Monks there are these four radiances (*pabhā*). What four? The radiance of the moon, the radiance of the sun, the radiance of fire, the radiance of wisdom..... Monks, among these four, the radiance of wisdom (*paññā pabhā*) is indeed the most excellent."  
— A. N. II. 139 f. Also see S. N. I. 6.

*Viññāṇaṃ anidassanaṃ - anantaṃ sabbatopabhaṃ*  
*Ettha āpo ca paṭhavi - tejo vāyo na gādhati*  
*Ettha dighañca rassañca - aṇuṃ thūlaṃ subhāsubhaṃ*  
*Ettha nāmañca rūpañca - asesam uparujjhati*  
*Viññāṇassa nirodhena<sup>1</sup> - etthetaṃ uparujjhati.*

— D. N. I. 213

"Consciousness which is non-manifestative, endless, lustrous  
on all sides,  
Here it is that earth and water, fire and wind, no footing find.  
Here again are long and short, subtle and gross, pleasant,  
unpleasant,  
Name and form, all these are here cut off without exceptions,  
When consciousness comes to cease, these are held in check herein."

Here too some acquaintance with the context will be helpful. A monk conceives the riddle, "Wherein do those four great elements viz. earth, water, fire and air cease altogether?"<sup>2</sup>, and in order to get a suitable answer, develops his psychic powers and goes from heaven to heaven querying gods and Brahmās in vain. At last he approaches the Buddha, and when the riddle is put to him, he remarks that it is not properly worded and therefore reformulates it thus, before giving his solution in the verse quoted above:

*"Kattha āpo ca paṭhavi - tejo vāyo na gādhati*  
*Kattha dighañca rassañca - aṇuṃ thūlaṃ subhāsubhaṃ*  
*Kattha nāmañca rūpañca - asesam uparujjhati?"*

"Where do earth and water, fire and wind - long and  
short, fine and coarse,  
Pleasant and unpleasant, no footing find - Where is it that  
name and form  
Are held in check with no trace left?"

<sup>1</sup> cf. A. N. I. 236; S. N. I. 35; Sn. v. 1037.

<sup>2</sup> "Kattha nu kho ime cattāro mahābhūtā aparisesā nirujjhanti, seyyathidaṃ paṭhavidhātu āpodhātu tejodhātu vāyodhātu'ti?"

According to the Buddha's reply, earth, water, fire and air do not find a footing, and long, short, subtle, gross, pleasant, unpleasant and name and form are completely cut off in a consciousness which makes nothing manifest<sup>1</sup> and which is infinite and *lustrous all-round*.<sup>2</sup> It is very likely that the reference again is to the *aññā-phala samādhi* (the 'Fruit-of-Knowledge' concentration) of the Arahant. Though less obvious, the string of negations is in general agreement with those

<sup>1</sup> For this particular sense of the term *anidassana*, see *Kakacūpama S. (M. N. I. 127)*: "Ayaṃ hi bhante ākāso arūpī anidassano, tattha na sukaraṃ rūpaṃ likhituṃ rūpa-pātubhāvaṃ kātuṃ."

"This sky, Lord, is non-material and *non illustrative*, it is not easy to paint a picture there or to *make manifest* pictures there."

*Nidassana* in its popular sense of 'illustration' means something that makes clear what is not already clear. Also see A. N. V. 61: *ummāpupphaṃ nīlaṃ nīlavannaṃ nīlanidassanaṃ nīlanibhāsaṃ*. "The flax flower, blue, blue coloured, *manifesting* blue, shining blue."

<sup>2</sup> The radiance of wisdom in its all-encompassing and penetrative aspects, which make it a vision and not a view.

A reference to a 'lustrous mind' is also found at A. N. I. 10:

*"Pabhassaraṃ idaṃ bhikkhave cittaṃ, tañca kho āgantukehi upakkilesehi upakkiliṭṭhaṃ. Taṃ assutavā puthujjano yathābhūtaṃ nappajānāti. Tasmā assutavato puthujjanaṃ cittaḥāvnā natthi'ti vadāmi. Pabhassaraṃ idaṃ bhikkhave.... upakkilesehi vippamuttaṃ. Taṃ sutavā ariyasāvako yathābhūtaṃ pajānāti. Tasmā sutavato ariyasāvakaṃ cittaḥāvanā atthi'ti vadāmi.*

"This mind, monks, is luminous, but it is defiled by taints that come from without. But this the uninstructed manyfolk understand not as it really is, wherefore for the uninstructed manyfolk there is no cultivation of the mind, I declare. This mind, monks, is luminous, and it is cleansed of taints that come from without. This the instructed noble disciple understands as *it* really is. Wherefore, for the instructed noble disciple there is cultivation of the mind, I declare." — G. S. I. 8.



that occur elsewhere in like contexts. Terms like long and short, subtle and gross, pleasant and unpleasant as well as name-and-form could easily be comprehended by the standard phrase 'whatever is seen, heard, sensed, cognized, attained, sought after and traversed by the mind'. The last line of the verse stresses the fact that the four great elements do not find a footing — and that name-and-form (comprehending them) can be cut off completely — in that *anidassana-viññāṇa* (the 'non-manifestative consciousness') of the Arahant, by the cessation of his normal consciousness which rests on the data of sense experience. This is a corrective to that monk's notion that the four elements can *cease altogether*<sup>1</sup> somewhere — a notion which had its roots in the popular conception of self-existing material elements. The Buddha's reformulation of the original question and this concluding line are meant to combat this wrong notion. It must also be mentioned that the first and the last lines are basic in this verse (cp. question and answer) since they stress that it is in the *anidassana viññāṇa* that a state of affairs similar to (though not identical with) the one envisaged by the question of that monk, could at all be expected. This consciousness of the Arahant is one that manifests nothing out of our world of concepts. It does not 'il-lustrate' (Lat, *lustrō*, 'bright') anything *though* (or *because*) it is itself *-all-lustrous,*' for darkness

<sup>1</sup> In place of the verb '*nirujjhati*' in the original question, the Buddha makes use of the verb '*uparujjhati*'. Hence it seems that we have to distinguish between the meanings of these two. It is not improbable that '*nirujjhati*' conveys the sense of complete cessation (as in '*saññā vedayita-nirodha*') whereas '*uparujjhati*' implies a 'holding-in-check' or a 'cutting-off'. This word would thus go well with the statement that the four elements do not find a footing (*na gādhati*) in the *jhānic* consciousness of the Arahant.

For this suggested sense of '*uparujjhati*' see *Mahā-Saccaka Sutta* (M. N.): "So kho ahaṃ Aggivessana, mukhato ca nāsato ca assāsapassāsāraṃ uparund'him." — "And I, Aggivessana, cut off in breathing and out-breathing through the mouth and the nose."

can never be illustrated or made manifest by light.<sup>1</sup> With his penetrative insight<sup>2</sup> the Arahant sees *through* the concepts. Now, an object of perception (*ārammaṇa*) for the worldling is essentially something that is brought into focus — something he is looking *at*. For the Arahant, however, all concepts have become transparent to such a degree in that all-encompassing vision, that their boundaries together with their umbra and penumbra have yielded to the radiance of wisdom.<sup>3</sup> This, then, is the significance of the word '*anantaṃ*' (endless, infinite). Thus the paradoxically detached gaze of the contemplative sage as he looks *through* concepts is one which has no object (*ārammaṇa*) as the point of focus for the worldling to identify it with. It is a gaze that is neither conscious nor non-conscious,<sup>4</sup> neither attentive, nor non-attentive<sup>5</sup>, neither fixed, nor not fixed<sup>6</sup> — a gaze that knows no horizon.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See A. N. II. 24f.

<sup>2</sup> *nibbedhikā-paññā, paññā paṭivedha, aññāpaṭivedha (paṭi-vyadh, 'to pierce')*

<sup>3</sup> Let this be an allusion to the three realms, *kāma* (sensuous), *rūpa* (fine-material) and *arūpa* (formless).

<sup>4</sup> *na saññī assa, saññī ca pana assa.*

<sup>5</sup> *na manasikareyya, manasi ca pana kareyya.*

<sup>6</sup> *na jhāyati, jhāyati ca pana.*

<sup>7</sup> (I) *Yassa jālinī visattikā - taṇhā natthi kuhiñci netave taṃ buddhaṃ anantagocaraṃ - apadaṃ kena padena nessatha.*  
— Dh. 180

"By what track can you lead that Awakened One who is trackless and whose range is endless and to whom there is not that entangling net of craving to lead anywhere?"

(II) *Duddasaṃ anantaṃ\* nāma - na hi saccaṃ sudassanaṃ paṭividdhā taṇhā - jānato passato natthi kiñcanaṃ.* — Ud. 80  
(\* vI. recognised by the Comm. P.T.S. prefers '*anattaṃ*').

"Hard to see is the 'endless' - not easy 'tis to see the truth.

Pierced through is craving- and naught for him who knows and sees."

The traditional interpretation as given by Buddhaghosa follows a different line altogether. To begin with, he presumes that the Buddha reformulated the question of that monk because the latter implied both the *organic* and the *inorganic* spheres by the terms earth, water, fire and air, whereas the question should — so he observes — legitimately refer only to the organic sphere. He therefore holds that the question as reformulated by the Buddha narrows down the field to the organic (. . . . *upādiṇṇaṃ yeva sandhāya pucchā*). This explanation does not appear plausible when we consider the fact that repeatedly in the suttas the Buddha and his disciples dissolve the dichotomy between the organic and the inorganic in matter.<sup>1</sup> How trivial the reformulated question becomes when Buddhaghosa's stipulation is granted can best be exemplified by quoting him.

".. *Dīgharassan ti santhānavasena upādārūpaṃ vuttam. Aṇum thūlan'ti: khuddakam vā mahantam vā imināpi upādārūpe vaṇṇa mattameva kathitam. Subhāsubhan'ti: subhañca asubhañca, upādārūpameva; kim pana upādārūpaṃ subham asubham ti atthi? Natthi, iṭṭhāniṭṭhārammaṇam pan'eva kathitam. Nāmañca rūpañcāti: nāmañca dīghādibhedam rūpañca...*" — D. A. I.

" 'Long-short': derived matter in terms of (a person's) stature is meant here. 'Subtle-gross': small or big: by this too, just the appearance of derived matter is implied. 'Pleasant-unpleasant'-comely and ugly; derived matter again. Why? Is there anything called comely and ugly in the case of derived matter? No. Just the pleasant and unpleasant as objects (of perception) are meant. 'Name and form': name and the (physical) form of said description, viz., long', etc."

According to this explanation, the terms 'long' and short', 'pleasant' and 'unpleasant', refer to an individual's bodily

<sup>1</sup> *Yā ceva kho pana ajjhakkā paṭhavindhātu, yā ca bāhirā paṭhavindhātu, paṭhavindhātūvesā---*

— *Mahā Hatthipadopama S. (M. N.)*

"And whatever earth-element that is in oneself and whatever earth-element that is external to oneself, (in both cases) it is just the earth-element."

characteristics. '*Nāma*' is his name and '*rūpa*' is his body possessing the above characteristics. We need hardly point out that the significance of the question has failed to emerge in this explanation. But as we shall see presently, this explanation begs the question. The explanatory verse of the Buddha is now interpreted as an allusion to *Nibbāna* as the actual after-death destiny of the Arahant. The term '*viññāṇa*' is explained simply, though not convincingly, as *Nibbāna* in the sense that it-must-be-known' (*viññātabban'ti viññāṇam*) and '*anidassanam*' as that which cannot be illustrated by examples (*nidassanābhāvato*). '*Pabhaṭ*' is taken as a variant form of '*papaṭ*' (ford). Thus *sabbato-pabhaṭ* ('with fords all-round') connotes the accessibility of *Nibbāna* through any one of the thirty-eight objects of contemplation. '*Having arrived at*' this *Nibbāna* (*idaṃ Nibbānam āgamma*) all these organic manifestations of matter '*cease altogether*, . . .'<sup>1</sup> It should be now sufficiently clear that the narrowed down redefinition of the elements of matter has enabled Buddhaghosa to interpret the verse in this manner.

In the *Brahmanimantanika Sutta* (M. N.) the first line of the above expository verse recurs in a manner which corroborates the interpretation we have advanced.

*Viññāṇam anidassanam anantam sabbato-pabham tam paṭhaviyā paṭhavittena ananubhūtam, āpassa āpattena ananubhūtam tejassa tejattena. . . . vāyassa vāyattena. . . . bhūtānam. bhūtattena . . . devānam devattena . . . pajāpatissa pajāpatittena. . . . brahmānam brahmattena. . . . ābhassarānam ābhassarattena . . . subha-kiṇṇānam subhakiṇṇattena . . . vehapphalānam vehapphalattena. . . . abhibhussa abhibhuttena . . . sabbassa sabbattena ananubhūtam.*

"Consciousness which makes nothing manifest, infinite and all-lustrous; it does not partake of the extensivity of earth, the cohesiveness of water, the hotness of fire, the movement of air, the creaturehood of creatures, the devahood of devas, the Pajā-patihood of *Pajāpati*, the Brahmahood of *Brahmā*, the radiance of the Radiant Ones, the lustre of the Lustrous Ones, the

<sup>1</sup> Buddhaghosa does not make any distinction in sense between '*nirujjhati*' and '*uparujjhati*.' Thus he comments '*uparujjhatī'ti nirujjhati*.' — See fn, 1, p. 59.

Vehapphalahood of the Vehapphala-Brahmas, the Overlordship of the Overlord and the Allness of the All."

There can be little doubt that at least here we have to regard the list of terms beginning with the four great elements in an abstract sense as concepts.<sup>1</sup> In the commentary to this sutta, Buddhaghosa seems to have revised his interpretations to some extent. While sticking to his former rendering of the term '*viññāna*', he explains '*anidassana*' somewhat differently. "It (*Nibbāna*) is '*anidassana*' in the sense that it does not approach the range of visual consciousness" (*cakkhuvīññāṇassa āpātham anupagamanato anidassanam nāma*). Again, the word '*anantam*' is rendered as in the *Kevaḍḍha Sutta*, but his comment on the expression '*sabbato-pabham*' shows an improvement here. Preference is given here to the implications of '*pabhā*' as lustre: "more lustrous than anything else,<sup>2</sup> since there is nothing more luminous or purer or whiter than *Nibbāna*." The second alternative meaning given is that "it is either the lord above everything or that it is not nonexisting anywhere, for it should not be said that *Nibbāna* is not to be found in any one of the (four) quarters such as the east." The interpretation in terms of a ford is here relegated to the third and last place, whereas it was given the pride of place in the commentary to the *Kevaḍḍha Sutta*. The very fact that Buddhaghosa advanced alternative explanations to the above expression shows that he was in doubt as to its true significance. His lack of consistency, and the inherent defects in his explanations in this respect, are no less indicative of his doubts.

Two oft-quoted passages in the *Udāna*, over whose interpretation a wide divergence of opinion prevails, may now be taken up.

(I) *Atthi bhikkhave tad āyatanam yattha neva paṭhavi na āpo na tejo na vāyo na ākāsaṇaṇcāyatanam na viññāṇaṇcāyatanam na ākiñcaññāyatanam na neva saññā-nāsaññāyatanam, nāyam loko na paro loko, na ubho candimasuriyā. Tatra 'pāham bhikkhave neva āgatim vadāmi, na gatim, na ṭhitim, na cutim, na upapattim,*

<sup>1</sup> Note the similarity of this list to that found in the *Mūlapariyāya Sutta* (M. N. 1). The *quality* referred to here probably corresponds to the first mode of *maññanā* (imagining), viz., *paṭhavim maññati* ('imagines earth to be earth'),

<sup>2</sup> '*sabbato pabhāsampannam*' — This analysis of the compound to give a comparative sense is not very apt.

*appatiṭṭhaṭ appavattaṭ anārammaṭ aṭ evetaṭ esev'anto dukkhassāti.* — Ud. 80

"There is, monks, that sphere wherein there is neither earth nor water nor fire nor air, wherein is neither the sphere of infinite space, nor that of infinite consciousness, nor that of nothingness, nor that of neither-perception nor-non-perception; wherein there is neither this world nor a world beyond, nor moon and sun. There, monks, I declare, is no coming, no going, no stopping, no passing away, no arising. It is not established, it continues not, it has no object. This, indeed, is the end of suffering."

(II) *Atthi bhikkhave ajātam abhūtam akatam asaṅkhatam. No c'etaṃ bhikkhave abhaviṣṣa ajātam abhūtam akatam asaṅkhatam na yidha jātassa bhūtassa katassa saṅkhatassa nissaraṇam paññāyetha. Yasmā ca kho bhikkhave atthi ajātam abhūtam akatam asaṅkhatam tasmā jātassa bhūtassa katassa saṅkhatassa nissaraṇam paññāyatīti.*

— Ud. 80 f.; Itiv. 37.

"Monks, there is a not-born, a not-become, a not-made, a not-compounded. Monks, if that not-born.... were not, there would be no escape here from what is born, become, made, compounded.<sup>1</sup> But since, monks, there is a not born . . . therefore there is an escape from

<sup>1</sup> *Saṅkhata* denotes what is compounded, concocted or put together. In the last analysis, it is the *mind* that does this, through its conative activities impelled by the ego-illusion (*abhisankhatam, abhisancetayitam*) The Arahant pacifies completely this tendency towards compounding and concocting (*sabbasaṅkhāra-samatha*). Since herein *mind* is the maker, to see penetratively the made (*kata*) **as** made, is to unmake it (*akata*), and to see penetratively the compounded (*saṅkhata*) **as** compounded, is to de-compose it (*asaṅkhata*). Where there is no 'putting-together' or compounding afresh, there is no 'falling-apart' or decomposition, and thus the Arahant abides in the Uncompounded element (*asaṅkhata-dhātu*) which itself is the Deathless (*amata*).

cf. '*saṅkhārānaṃ khayam ṇatvā akataññūsi brāhmaṇa*'. - Dhṛp, 383, "By knowing the destruction of preparations, be thou O Brahmin, **one-who-knows-the-unmade.**"

what is born, become, made, compounded."

Both passages are presented as exhortations on Nibbāna with which the Buddha inspired the assemblage of monks. Both begin with an emphatic affirmative (*atthi*) and proceed in the form of a series of negations. While discussing the nature of *aññā-phala-samādhi* (the 'Fruit-of-Knowledge' Concentration) with the help of a specimen out of a number of thematic suttas, we have observed the note of diffidence and wonderment ringing through the questions. We have seen the emphatic tone characterising the replies. The paradox posed by that peculiar *samādhi* of the Arahant also came up for discussion. Hence the emphatic affirmative prefixed to these two sutta passages need not surprise us. As for the two series of negations in the respective passages, there does appear — *prima facie* — considerable divergence in formulation. We shall therefore examine them singly.

The former passage speaks, first of all, of an *āyatana* (sphere)<sup>1</sup> in which the four material elements, the four formless realms, this world, the world beyond, and the sun and moon are not found. We are now sufficiently familiar with such formulations to be able to identify them as referring to concepts and to resist the temptation to read into them any gross physical sense. It is further said that in this sphere there is neither coming nor going nor staying, neither dying nor being born. Here again we have a reference to abstract notions and not to actual facts implied by them. These notions are part and parcel of our phenomenal world of relative concepts, and come under the standard formula — 'whatever is seen, heard, sensed, cognised, attained, sought after and traversed by the mind.' The last three significant terms in the passage, viz, 'not established', 'not continuing', 'not having an object', are obvious allusions to the 'paradoxical gaze' or the transcendental consciousness of the

---

<sup>1</sup> cf. "When shall I attain to and abide in that sphere (*tadāyatanaṃ*) which the noble ones now attain to and abide in?" Thus as he cherishes a desire for the incomparable deliverances (*anuttāresu vimokkhesu*), anxiety arises in him due to desire." — M. N. III 218.

Arahant. These three terms (viz., *appaṭiṭṭhaṃ appavattaṃ anārammaṇaṃ*) correspond respectively to his threefold deliverance (*vimokkho*) — *suññato* (void), *appaṇihito* (free from longing) and *animitto* (signless).<sup>1</sup> Due to the penetrative vision of *paññā* (wisdom), concepts become transparent (*animitta* - 'signless') giving rise to utter detachment (*appaṇihito*) and the sage **real**-ises the voidness of the world (*suññatā*.) It is in the 'light' of this transcendental vision that he declares — as the Buddha did — "Void is this world of anything that is self or of anything that belongs to self" (*suññam idaṃ attena vā attaniyena vā* — S. N. IV. 54).

The latter Udāna passage asserts that there is a state which is not-born, not become, not made and not compounded; for if there were no such state, there would be no possibility here of "stepping out from the born, the become, the made and the compounded." This 'stepping-out' is effected here and now (Note: *idha* in the passage) in that emancipated mind of the Arahant,<sup>2</sup> to which the latter set of terms is inapplicable since all that is born, become, made and compounded can be subsumed under that comprehensive formula to

---

<sup>1</sup> cf. Dh. 92, *Paṭis*. II 63.

<sup>2</sup> Neither of the two Udāna passages in question seems to refer to *saññā-vedayita-nirodha-samāpatti* (the attainment of cessation of perceptions and feelings) though in a sense it has an indirect connection with the *aññā-phala*. In the former, consciousness is in temporary abeyance, and since there is no ambiguity in regard to its content in terms of *saññā*, such negations as those we found in the first paragraph will be superfluous. However, it does have a relevance to *aññā-phala-samādhi* as it is a prelude to the final 'stepping-out' effected through *paññā*. This fact would emerge from the following reference.

*Saññāvedayitanirodhasamāpattiyā vuṭṭhitaṃ kho āvuso Visākha, bhikkhuṃ tayo phassā phusanti: suññato phasso animitto phasso appaṇihito phasso'ti.* — M. N. I. 302, *Cūla Vedalla S.*

"Friend Visākha, when a monk *has emerged from* the attainment of the stopping of perception and feeling, three impingements assail him: impingement that is void, impingement that is signless, impingement that is undirected." — M. L. S. I 365.

which reference has already been made. For a better appreciation of the note of emphasis in this passage, one may also consider the *Zeitgeist* at the advent of the Buddha. This was the time when the Indian mind imbued with yogic traditions found itself in a dilemma: 'to be conscious or not to be conscious'.<sup>1</sup> The fact that even the most rarefied realms of sense-perception were not reliable was sometimes realised and the possibility of a way out of the network of *saññā* (perception) was a favourite subject of discussion at the assemblies of ascetic groups, as we are told in the *Poṭṭhapāda Sutta* (D. N.). Some religious teachers of renown like *Pokkharasāti* were scornfully sceptic about such a possibility among human beings (*Subha Sutta*, M. N.). Hence the fact that there is a break-through here and now needs all the emphasis it rightly deserves.<sup>2</sup>

The negative terms which often characterise the definitions of *Nibbāna* are significant of the detachment from all that is worldly and conditioned. It must be pointed out that whenever it is said that the five aggregates should be viewed as not-self, it primarily refers to those aggregates that are available for reflection to any *specific* individual. There can be considerable variation in the quality of the aggregates that any individual can muster for developing the

---

<sup>1</sup> . . . *Saññā rogo, saññā gaṇḍo, saññā sallam; asaññā sammoho. Etaṃ santam etaṃ paṇītam yadidaṃ neva-saññā-nāsaññāyatanaṃ'ti* — M. N. (*Pañcattaya S.*)

"Perception is a disease, a boil, a dart, and absence of perception is delusion. This is peaceful, this is excellent, that is to say, the realm of neither-perception-nor-non-perception."

<sup>2</sup> - . . . *kāmānaṃ etaṃ nissaraṇaṃ yadidaṃ nekkhammaṃ, rupānaṃ etaṃ nissaraṇaṃ yadidaṃ āruppaṃ, yaṃ kho pana kiñci bhūtaṃ saṃkhattaṃ paṭiccasamuppannaṃ nirodho tassa nissaraṇaṃ. Imā kho bhikkhave tisso nissaraṇiṃyā dhātuyo.* — Itiv., p. 61.

"Renunciation is the stepping-out from sense-pleasures, the formless is the stepping-out from the (realms of) form. But whatever there is that is become, compounded and conditionally arisen, cessation is the stepping-out from it. These, monks, are the three elements of stepping-out."

momentum required for utter detachment.<sup>1</sup> For instance, the aggregates reflected upon by one who makes the first *jhāna* his point of departure from *Samsāra* would be qualitatively different from those utilised by another with the second *jhāna*. As the canonical simile<sup>2</sup> goes, even as an archer or his apprentice first practises on a straw-dummy or on a tablet of clay and afterwards, when he has mastered the art, shoots even long distances, renting asunder big objects by the flash of lightning, even so the aspirant practises detachment on his set of aggregates reflecting upon their impermanent, sorrow-fraught, not-self character, and thereafter aims at the 'Deathless Element' with the aid of a convenient phrase suggestive of the very antithesis of his present predicament. This is why the synonyms for *Nibbāna*, either explicitly or implicitly, connote the negation of worldly imperfections. The words and the phrases used serve as a *target* for his supreme detachment — a target which he does not *grasp* but *pierces through* with the arrow of wisdom.

The monk who succeeds in detaching his mind from his present set of aggregates and aims at complete detachment which is the 'Deathless Element' or *Nibbāna*, has one more hurdle to clear — a subtle one at that. Unless he looks sharp and keeps to the moral of the Parable of the Raft, he can sometimes conceive attachment (*rāga*) or delight (*nandi*) for those very concepts which he utilises to attain *Nibbāna*. It is as if he were to hold on to the overhanging creeper with which he leaped across the stream, even when he is well above the farther bank.<sup>3</sup> The creeper hangs down from a tree on the hither bank, hence unless he 'lets go' the firm hold with which he had 'grasped' it, he will oscillate back again. Luckily for him, however, the *Anāgāmin* ('Non-Returner') true to his name, has developed his mind to that point of 'No-Return' (*anāvattidhammo*) where although he may hesitate for a brief

---

<sup>1</sup> Eleven basic types are given at A.N.V. 346; *Aṭṭhakanāgara S.* (M. N.). See also *Āneñjasappāya S.* (M. N.)

<sup>2</sup> A. N. IV 243.

<sup>3</sup> A simile used by Buddhaghosa (Vism. XXII), though its implications do not seem to have been fully appreciated.

For an illustration of the *Anāgāmin's* subtle attachment see S. N. III. 126 ff. (*Khema S.*)

while until the tension (*saṅkhārā*) ends, he lets go his hold before the creeper can swing him back again. To echo the exclamation of Ānanda in the *Āneñjasappāya Sutta* (M. N.): "Marvellous is it, O Lord, extraordinary is it, O Lord, that the Lord, the Exalted One, has preached to us the crossing of the flood by relative dependence." (*Acchariyam bhante abbhutam bhante! Nissāya nissāya kira no bhagavatā oghassa nittharaṇā akkhātā.*)

The Noble Disciple's humble aspiration as he fares on the Noble Eightfold Path is: "Surely, there must be an end to this *entire*, mass of suffering!"<sup>1</sup> When he says 'entire', he means 'entire'. He knows full well that even the concept or concepts which he provisionally takes hold of — all rafts, targets and creepers — are not worth clinging to once they have served their purpose. Hence he entertains no qualms concerning any form of absolute eternal existence, however subtle it may be. He puts an end to this entire mass of suffering at the price of all attachments gross or subtle (*anupādāparinibbāna*).<sup>2</sup> That done, his task is done (*kataṃ karaṇīyam*).

### Papañca and the Doctrine of Paṭicca-Samuppāda

The analysis of the problem of bondage and release in terms of concepts derives its validity from the fact that the possibility of liberation *here and now* is essentially dependent on our success in breaking down the vital nexus of egoistic attachment between the mutually interdependent consciousness on the one hand and name-and-form on the other. We are told that their interdependence is similar to that of two standing bundles of reeds which are mutually supported at the top, so that should one be drawn the other must necessarily fall down. This mutual dependence between them, as well as their relevance to the problem of concepts, will be borne out by the following sutta passages.

<sup>1</sup> *Appeva nāma imassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa antakiriyaṃ paññāyetha*, (Itiv., p. 89)

<sup>2</sup> '*Nāññatra sabbanissaggā - sotthim passāmi paṇinam*' — S. N. I. 54. "Save by their renouncing all - no weal for beings do I behold."

(I) *Seyyathāpi āvuso dve nalakaḷāpiyo aññamaññam nissāya tiṭṭheyyum evameva kho āvuso nāmarūpapaccayā viññānam viññānapaccayā nāmarūpam nāmarūpapaccayā saḷāyatanam saḷāyatanapaccayā phasso phassapaccayā vedanā vedanāpaccayā taṭṭhā taṇhāpaccayā upādānam upādānapaccayā bhavo bhava paccayā jāti jātipaccayā jarāmaranam sokaparidevadukkhadomanassupāyāsā sambhavanti. Evam etassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa samudayo hoti. Tesañce āvuso nalakalāpinam ekam ākaḍḍheyya ekā papateyya, aparāñce ākaḍḍheyya aparā papateyya. Evam eva kho āvuso nāmarūpanirodhā viññānanirodho, viññānanirodhā nāmarūpanirodho nāmarūpanirodhā saḷāyatananirodho ... Evam etassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa nirodho hoti.* — S. N. II. 114.

"Just as if, friend, two bundles of reeds were to stand one supporting the other, even so friend consciousness is dependent on name-and-form, and name-and-form is dependent on consciousness, and the six spheres of sense on name-and-form, contact on the six spheres, feeling on contact, craving on feeling, grasping on craving, becoming on grasping, birth on becoming, and old-age, death, sorrow, lamentation, pain, unhappiness and despair are dependent on birth. Thus is the arising of this entire mass of suffering. But, friend, if one of those two bundles of reeds is drawn out, the other one would fall down, and if the latter is drawn, the former one will fall down. Even so, friend, with the cessation of name-and-form, consciousness ceases, with the cessation of consciousness, name-and-form ceases, with the cessation of name-and-form, the six sense-spheres cease ..... Thus comes to be the cessation of this entire mass of suffering."

(II) *Paccudāvattati kho idaṃ viññānam nāmarūpamhā nāparam gacchati. Ettāvatā jāyetha vā jīyetha vā mīyetha vā cavetha vā uppajjetha vā, yadidaṃ nāmarūpapaccayā viññānam viññānapaccayā nāmarūpam nāmarūpa paccayā saḷāyatanam ... Evam etassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa samudayo hoti.*

— D. N. II. 32 (*Mahāpadāna S.*)

"This consciousness turns back from name-and-form, it does not go beyond. In so far as one can be born or grow old or die or pass away or reappear, in so far as this is, to wit, consciousness is dependent on name-and-form, name-and-form on consciousness, the six sense

spheres on name-and-form. . . . Thus comes to be the arising of this entire mass of suffering."

(III) *Ettāvatā kho Ānanda jāyetha vā jīyetha vā mīyetha vā cavetha vā uppajjetha vā, ettāvatā adhivacanapatho, ettāvatā niruttipatho, ettāvatā paññattipatho, ettāvatā paññāvacaram, ettāvatā vaṭṭam vaṭṭati itthattam paññāpanāya, yadidaṃ nāmarūpaṃ saha viññāṇena*<sup>1</sup>.

—D. N. II. 63f. (*Mahā-nidāna S.*)

"In so far only, Ananda, can one be born, or grow old, or die, pass away or reappear, in so far only is there any pathway for verbal expression, in so far only is there any pathway for terminology, in so far only is there any pathway for designations, in so far only is there any sphere of knowledge, in so far only is the round (of *samsaric* life) kept going for there to be any designation of the conditions of this existence."<sup>2</sup>

—D. B. II. 61

The interdependence between *viññāṇa* and *nāmarūpa* in the case of the worldling is such that the one turns back from the other (*paccudāvattati*) refusing to go further (*nāparam gacchati*). This is the vortex proper of all *samsaric* currents (*ettāvatā vaṭṭam vaṭṭati*) which sooner or later engulfed all pre-Buddhist attempts at crossing the fourfold flood.<sup>3</sup> Hence a permanent solution had to be effected at this very vortex, and an approach to the seething mass was rendered possible by the fact that all pathways of *concepts* and *designations* converged on it, providing sufficient scope for wisdom to work its way through (*ettāvatā paññāvacaram*). Perfect Wisdom, however, could not be ushered in until all tendrils of *samkhārā* feeding on ignorance (*avijjā*) have been torn asunder. This difficult feat the

<sup>1</sup> The commentary glosses over the key terms in this passage, with little attempt to draw out their deeper implications.

<sup>2</sup> T. W. and C. A. F. Rhys Davids, however, have sensed the importance of this passage when they remark: "The little paragraph contains a great part of modern psychology in the germ state." — D. B., II. 61 fn. 2

<sup>3</sup> *kāma* (sense-desire), *bhava* (becoming), *dīṭṭhi* (view), *avijjā* (ignorance).

Buddha accomplished, thereby extirpating all craving,<sup>1</sup> and thus there broke upon his enlightened mind the relevance of the two links '*avijjā*' and '*samkhārā*' to the vicious cycle of rebirth. The almost inseparable nexus of attachment between consciousness and 'name-and-form' was severed<sup>2</sup> and the sage found refuge in that *anidassana viññāṇa* wherefrom all currents turn back, and wherein the vortex holds no sway.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> '*visaṃkharagataṃ cittaṃ-taṇhānaṃ khayam ajjhagā.*'

—Dhp. 154.

<sup>2</sup> *Pahāsi saṅkham - na ca mānam ajjhagā  
acchecchi taṇham - idhā nāmarūpe  
taṃ chinnagantham - anigham nirāsam  
pariyesamānā nājjhagamum  
devā manussā idha vā huram vā  
saggesu vā sabbanivesanesu.* — S. N. I. 12

"He cast out reckoning, no measuring he found,  
Craving he cut off, in his name-and-form.  
That bond-free one, from blemish and longing free,  
Him, no gods or men in their search could ken,  
Here or in worlds beyond, in heavens or in all abodes."

<sup>3</sup> *Kuto sarā nivattanti - kattha vaṭṭam na vaṭṭati  
kattha nāmañca rūpañca - asesam uparujjhati  
Yattha apo ca paṭhavi - tejo vayo na gādhati  
ato sarā nivattanti - ettha vaṭṭam na vaṭṭati  
ettha nāmañca rūpañca - asesam uparujjhati* - ib. 12.

"Wherefrom do currents turn back - where whirls no more the whirlpool?  
Wherein are name-and-form - held in check with no trace left?  
And where do earth and water - fire and air, no footing find?  
Hence do all currents turn back - here whirls no more the whirlpool.  
Here it is that name-and-form are held in check with no trace left."  
Cf. Ud. 75; Dhp. v. 25; M. N. III. 239.

The above-mentioned interdependence between *viññāṇa* and *nāmarūpa* is a corollary of the mutual dependence between *nāma* and *rūpa* in their Buddhistic sense.<sup>1</sup> 'Form' (*rūpa*) can secure a basis in consciousness only in collaboration with 'name' (*nāma*)<sup>2</sup> and this is where the concept comes in. Though matter, in its gross conventional sense, cannot be completely transcended so long as one's physical body is there, 'name-and-form' as the concept of matter can be dissolved or melted away through wisdom, as was done by the Buddha and the Arahants. The concept is what it is, due

---

<sup>1</sup> *Yehi Ānanda ākārehi yehi līgehi yehi nimittehi yehi uddesehi nāmakāyassa paññatti hoti, tesu ākāresu tesu līgesu tesu nimittesu tesu uddesesu asati, api nu kho rūpakāye adhvācānasamphasso paññāyethā'ti? — No hetam bhante. — Yehi Ānanda ākārehi... rūpakāyassa paññatti, tesu ākāresu. . . . asati, api nu kho nāmakāye paṭighasamphasso paññāyethā'ti — No hetam bhante. — Yehi Ānanda ākārehi... nāmakāyassa ca rūpakāyassa ca paññatti hoti, tesu ākāresu. . . . asati, api nu kho adhvācānasamphasso vā paṭighasamphasso vā paññāyethā'ti? — No hetam bhante.*

— D. N.: II. 62 (*Mahā-Nidāna S.*)

"Those modes, features, characters, exponents by which the aggregate called 'name' is designated — if all these were absent would there be any manifestation of a corresponding verbal impression in the aggregate called '(bodily) form'?" — "There would not, Lord." — "Those modes, features, characters, exponents by which the aggregate called '(bodily) form' is designated — if all these were absent would there be any manifestation of an impression of sense-reaction in the aggregate called 'name'?" — "There would not, Lord." — "And if all those modes.. of both kinds were absent would there be any manifestation of either verbal or sensory impression?" — "There would not, Lord."

<sup>2</sup> *Vedanā saññā cetanā phasso manasikāro, idaṃ vuccatāvuso nāmaṃ. Cattāri ca mahābhūtāni catunnaṃca mahābhūtānaṃ upādāya rūpaṃ, idaṃ vuccatāvuso rūpaṃ* — M. N., *Sammāditṭhi S.*

"Feeling, perception, conation, contact, attention — these, brethren, are called 'name'. The four great elements and the matter derived from them — these, brethren, are called 'form'."

to some kind of crystallization or fabrication, and this is brought about by the 'fermenting-agent' — the '*āsavas*' (influxes, cankers) as they are called. The darkness of ignorance (*avijjā*) is leavened, as it were, by this ferment (*āsava*).<sup>1</sup> Now, one of the most regular phrases that accompany the declaration of the attainment of emancipation is: "Having seen through wisdom, his cankers are made extinct" (*paññāya c'assa disvā āsavā parikkhīnā honti*). Once the fermenting-agent is thus destroyed, concepts in the strict sense of the term cannot occur in the emancipated mind (v. supra, p. 36), though he may think and speak with the help of worldly concepts. Since the cankers which agglutinate the concept are no more, the Arahant can render concepts non-manifest (*anidassana*) in his *jhānic* consciousness with as much ease as (to use the relevant canonical simile) a man whose hands and feet are cut off, reflects and knows that he has lost his limbs (*Sandaka S.*: M. N., I. 523). It may also be added that it is this fermenting-agent which — in its dynamic manifestations as *saṅkhāras* — is instrumental in graphically presenting before the consciousness of a dying individual that concept or percept<sup>2</sup> which serves as a *footing* for his rebirth. The process of crystallization that follows is not essentially different from the process whereby an idea becomes an artifact at the hands of a craftsman, due to grasping and moulding. The traditional simile of the potter is not yet obsolete.<sup>3</sup> His grasping and moulding of the raw-material is but the outward manifestation of his grasp on the concept of a pot. Once he loses his grasp on the latter — that is, once the concept loses its reality for him — he will automatically lose interest in the moulding of that idea and no pot will result. Similarly, when concepts have lost their *fecundity* for an individual, they will never fertilize or proliferate into any kind of rebirth. As we saw above, the consciousness of the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Āsavasamudayā avijjāsamudayo, āsavanirodhā avijjānirodho.* — M. N., I. 54 (*Sammāditṭhi S.*)

"With the arising of cankers there is the arising of ignorance, with the cessation of cankers there is the cessation of ignorance."

<sup>2</sup> Any sign or symbol, not necessarily a linguistic one. Even the bare<sup>1</sup> latency' (*anusaya*) is sufficient. See S. N. II. 67.

<sup>3</sup> Compare the simile of the painter at S. N. III. 151.



Buddha and Arahants manifests nothing (*anidassana*) and is devoid of that dynamic ferment (*khīṇabīja; visamkhāragatam cittam*). Hence it is that they pass away with a consciousness which is unestablished (*appatiṭṭhita-viññāṇa* — S.N., I. 122). In other words, their consciousness comes to an end (*viññāṇam attham agamā* — Ud, 93).

In order the better to appreciate the above solution of the Buddha to the problem of suffering, we may briefly contrast it with the pre-Buddhistic attempts at release. These attempts, as a rule, were inspired by a false dichotomy between 'mind' and 'matter'. In search of a way out, they either pitted mind against matter (self mortification, *attakilamathānuyoga*) or set matter against mind (self-indulgence, *kāmasukhallikānuyoga*). In the former case, the yogins found themselves in a spiritual *cul-de-sac* with the dilemma — 'to be conscious or not to be conscious' and the most they could do was to develop the *jhāna* of 'neither-perception-nor-non-perception.' In the latter case, it was simply a question of 'to be or not to be.' The former could not extricate themselves out of even the most subtle *jhānic* experience possible at the worldly level, because they developed an attachment to it, and hence they found themselves reappearing in the formless realms (*arūpa loka*). The latter, due to their materialistic disregard for all ethics in their gross indulgence, found themselves repeatedly shackled to lower realms of sensuality (*kāmaloka*). The one 'lagged behind' obsessed with the concept of a metaphysical soul, whereas the other 'over-reached' himself owing to his narcissistic attachment to his body.<sup>1</sup> In either case whither they *inclined* thither they fell, yet what they sought, that they did not find. The reason was that they were led by *inclinations* amassed through their bodily, verbal and mental preparations (*kāya- vacī- mano-samkhāra*) in their ethical manifestations as the 'meritorious', the 'demeritorious' and the 'imperturbable' (*puñña-apuñña-āneñjābhi samkhāra*). With their triple *papañca* they created their own 'worlds' and found themselves thrown into them.

<sup>1</sup> "Obsessed by two views, O monks, do some gods and men lag behind (*olīyanti*) while yet others over-reach themselves (*atidhāvanti*), Only they do see that have eyes to see." — Itiv. 43.

When viewed against this background, we see that the Buddha's solution to the problem of 'escape from the *world* of suffering' was based on a restatement of the whole problem. His vision into the universal law of Dependent Arising with its three corollaries of impermanence, suffering and not-self, exposed the fallacy of the rigid dichotomy between mind and matter. He realised the conditioned, phenomenal nature of the world, which necessitated a redefinition of the concept of the world. Thus he declared that in the terminology (lit. 'discipline') of the Noble Ones (*ariyassa vinaye*) the 'world' is indistinguishable from the concept thereof.

(I) "That by which one is conscious of the world, by which one has conceit of the world — that is called 'world' in the Noble One's discipline. And through what is one conscious of the world? Through what has one conceit of the world? Through the eye, friends, through the ear, the nose, the tongue, the body and the mind-- S N. IV. 9 5

(II) "That end of the world wherein one is not born, does not grow old or die, pass away or reappear, that I declare, is impossible to be known, seen or reached by travelling. But, friend, I do not declare that one can make an end of suffering without reaching the end of the world. Friend, I do proclaim that in this very fathom-long body, with its perceptions and consciousness, is the world, the world's arising, the world's cessation and the path leading to the world's cessation."

— A. N. II. 48

(III) " 'The world, the world,' O Lord, they call it. In what sense, O Lord, is there a world or a concept of a world?"

"Wherever, Samiddhi, there is the eye, the visible forms, the visual consciousness and the things perceptible with the visual consciousness, there is the world or the concept of it. Wherever there is the ear, . . . nose . . . tongue . . . , body . . . , mind.

"Wherever, Samiddhi, there is no eye, no visible forms, no visual consciousness and nothing perceptible with the visual consciousness, there is neither a world nor a concept of a world... Wherever there is no ear . . . nose . . . tongue . . . body . . . mind"<sup>1</sup>

— S N. 1V. 39-40

<sup>1</sup> cf. M. N. I. 112. (*Madhupiṇḍika S.*)

Thus the world is what our senses present it to us to be. However, the world is not purely a projection of the mind in the sense of a thoroughgoing idealism;<sup>1</sup> only, it is a phenomenon which the empirical consciousness cannot get behind, as it is itself committed to it. One might, of course, transcend the empirical consciousness and see the world objectively in the light of *paññā* only to find that it is void (*suñña*) of the very characteristics which made it a 'world' for oneself.

To those who are complacently perched on their cosy conceptual superstructures regarding the world, there is no more staggering a revelation than to be told that the world is a void. They might recoil from the thought of being plunged into the abysmal depths of a void where concepts are no more. But one need not panic, for the descent to those depths is gradual and collateral with rewarding personal experience. Hence the three significant terms in Buddhist ethics, *anupubbāsikkhā*, *anupubbakiriyā*, *anupubbapaṭipadā* ('gradual training, gradual doing, gradual practice').<sup>2</sup> One can, therefore, without inhibition, make use of the conceptual tools at his command in his spiritual endeavours—only he must sharpen them, and continue to sharpen them, until they wear themselves out in the process of use.<sup>3</sup> He has to be guided by the twin principles of relativity and pragmatism. The spiritual training in Buddhism is broad-based on the most elementary fact of experience — *dukkha*. It proceeds on and culminates in experience. Experience is itself the ultimate criterion of truth and not its predicability. Yet, from the worldling's point of view, predicability is of the very essence of truth.

*'Akkheyyasaññino sattā - akkheyyasmim patitṭhitā  
akkheyye apariññāya - yogam āyanti maccuno  
akkheyyaṅca pariññāya - akkhātāram na maññati  
tam hi tassa na hotīti - yena nam vajju tam tassa natthi'*

— S. N. I. 11

<sup>1</sup> It seems that the necessary precaution has been taken in the above *Samiddhi Sutta* itself. In addition to the three factors, the eye, the visible forms and the visual consciousness, it refers to a fourth, i. e. 'things perceptible with visual consciousness.'

<sup>2</sup> M. N. I. 479, M. N. 111. 1 ff.

<sup>3</sup> See M. N. I. 411 (*Apaṇṇaka S.*).

"Men, aware alone of what is told by names,  
Take up their stands on what is expressed.  
If this, they have not rightly understood,  
They go their ways under the yoke of Death.  
He who has understood what is expressed,  
He fancies not, as to 'one who speaks'.  
Unto him such things do not occur,  
And that by which others may know him  
That, for him, exists not."

— K. S. I. 16 ff.

Thus the worldling is at the mercy of concepts,<sup>1</sup> but still the Buddha shows how he can make the best out of a bad situation. He can make use of the concepts themselves to develop insight into the emptiness of concepts. What is necessary is a Middle Path between the extreme views of existence and non-existence. According to the Buddha, the worldling, for the most part, rests on the verbal dichotomy of existence and non-existence. In the light of wisdom both these extremes are proved false:

*Dvayanissito khvāyam Kaccāyana loko yebhuyyena, atthitañceva natthitañca. Lokasamudayaṃ kho Kaccāyana yathābhūtaṃ sammappaññāya passato yā loke natthitā sā na hoti. Lokanirodham kho Kaccāyana. . . yā loke atthitā sā na hoti.*

*Upāyupādānābhinivesavinibandho khvāyam Kaccāyana loko yebhuyyena. Tañcāyaṃ upāyupādānaṃ cetaso adhiṭṭhānaṃ abhinivesānusayaṃ na upeti na upādiyati nādhiṭṭhati attā meti. Dukkhameva uppajjamānaṃ uppajjati, dukkhaṃ nirujjhamānaṃ nirujjhatīti na kaṃkhati na vicikicchati aparappaccayā ñāṇamevassa ettha hoti. Ettāvatā kho Kaccāyana sammā diṭṭhi hoti.*

*Sabbaṃ atthīti kho Kaccāyana ayam eko anto, sabbaṃ natthīti ayaṃ dutiyo anto.*

*Ete te ubho ante anupagamma majjhena Tathāgato dhammaṃ deseti avijjā paccayā saṅkhāra. . . .*

— S. N. II. 17

<sup>1</sup> *Nāmaṃ sabbaṃ anvabhavi - nāmā bhīyo na vijjati  
nāmassa ekadhammassa - sabbeva vasamanvagu* — S. N. I. 39

"Name has conquered everything - higher than name there's none;  
To name - to this one thing - is subject everyone."

"This world, Kaccāyana, usually bases (its views) on two things, on existence and non-existence.

"Now he who with right insight sees the arising of the world as it really is, does not hold with the non-existence of the world. And he who with right insight sees the passing away of the world as it really is, does not hold with the existence of the world.

"The world, for the most part, is given to approaching, grasping, entering into and getting entangled (as regards views). Whoever does not approach, grasp, and take his stand upon that proclivity towards clinging, approaching and grasping, that mental standpoint, namely the thought: 'This is my soul'; he knows that what arises is just Ill and what ceases is just Ill. Thus he is not in doubt, is not perplexed and herein he has knowledge that is not merely another's. Thus far, Kaccāyana, he has right view.

" 'Everything exists' — this is one extreme. 'Nothing exists' — this is the other extreme. Not approaching either of those extremes, the Tathāgata teaches the Doctrine by the middle-way. 'Conditioned by ignorance, preparations come to pass.....

—K. S. II. 12

In conceptual terms this Middle Path would mean that there is an arising (*uppāda*), a passing away (*vaya*) and an otherwiseness in persistence (*thitassa aññathatta*) of phenomena. It might even be summed up in paradoxical terms as a series of intermittent 'arisings' and 'passings away' with nothing that arises and passes away — a flux of becoming (*bhavasota*). But this is as far as concepts go, and the rest has to be accomplished through intuitive wisdom. The primary significance of the formula of Dependent Arising lies here. Lists of phenomena, both mental and material, are linked together with the term '*paccaya*' or any of its equivalents,<sup>1</sup> and the fact of their conditionality and non-substantiality is emphasised with the help of analysis and synthesis. Apart from serving the immediate purpose of their specific application, these formulas help us to *attune* our minds in

<sup>1</sup> Such as, *hetu*, *nidāna*, *samudaya*, *pabhava*, *upanisā*.

order to gain *paññā*. Neither the words in these formulas, nor the formulas as such, are to be regarded as ultimate categories. We have to look not so much *at* them as *through* them. We must not miss the wood for the trees by dogmatically clinging to the words in the formulas as being ultimate categories. As concepts, they are merely the modes in which the flux of material and mental life has been arrested and split up in the realm of ideation, as for instance in the case of milk, curd, butter and ghee.<sup>1</sup> From the worldling's point of view, they are infested with the problems of identity and difference, which tend to resolve themselves into extreme notions of absolute existence and non existence. The main purpose of the formula of Dependent Arising is to blaze the Middle Path of conditionality as summed up in the abstract principle:

---

<sup>1</sup> *Seyyathāpi Citta gavā khīraṃ, khīramhā dadhi, dadhimhā navanītaṃ, navanītamhā sappi, sappimhā sappimaṇḍo; yasmiṃ samaye khīraṃ hoti neva tasmim samaye dadhīti saṃkhaṃ gacchati, na navanītanti saṃkhaṃ gacchati, na sappīti, . . . na sappimaṇḍoti .. khīrantveva tasmim samaye saṃkhaṃ gacchati; yasmiṃ samaye dadhi hoti. . . . navanītaṃ hoti. . - sappi hoti .... sappimaṇḍo hoti neva tasmim samaye khiranti saṃkhaṃ gacchati, na dadhīti.... na navanītanti, . . . na sappīti ... sappimaṇḍotveva tasmim samaye saṃkhaṃ gacchati. Evameva kho Citta yasmiṃ samaye oḷāriko attapaṭilābho hoti - pe - Yasmiṃ Citta samaye arūpo attapaṭilābho hoti, neva tasmim samaye oḷāriko attapaṭilābhoti saṃkhaṃ gacchati, na manomayo attapaṭilābhoti saṃkhaṃ gacchati, arūpo attapaṭilābhotveva tasmim samaye saṃkhaṃ gacchati. Imā kho Citta lokasamaññā lokaniruttiyo lokavohārā lokapaññattiyo yāhi Tathāgato voharati aparāmasanti.*  
—D. N. I. 202

"Just, Citta, as from a cow comes milk, and from milk curds, and from curds butter, and from the butter ghee, and from the ghee junket; but when it is milk, it is not called curds or butter or ghee or junket — and when it is curds, it is not called by any of the other names and so on.

"Just so Citta, when any one of the three modes of personality (i.e., the gross, the mental and the formless) is going on, it is not called by the names of the others. For these, Citta, are merely names, expressions, turns of speech, designations in common use in the world. And of these a Tathāgata (one who has won the truth) makes use indeed, but is not led astray by them."

—D. B. I 263

*Imasmim sati idam hoti,  
Imass'uppādā idam uppajjati  
Imasmim asati idam na hoti,  
Imassa nirodhā idam nirujjhati.*

— M. N. III. 63

"When this is, this comes to be; with the arising of this, this arises; when this is not, this does not come to be, with the stopping of this, this is stopped."

All the formulas of *Paṭicca Samuppāda* are specific applications of this principle. When applied to the phenomena of our daily experience, this principle enables us to wean our minds from the tendency to rest on the concepts of existence and non-existence. As a preliminary step towards this end, those two concepts are replaced by the two terms 'uppāda' (arising) and 'vaya' (decay). These latter enable us to view the two extremes *rightly* (*sammā diṭṭhi*) as they are suggestive of conditionality. In developing *samatha* and *vipassanā* (calm and insight), the mind is made to oscillate between these two terms with *ever increasing* momentum, spurred on by the three signata: *anicca* (transience), *dukkha* (suffering) and *anattā* (not-self). At the peak of intensity in this oscillation, the lingering notions of existence and non-existence wane into insignificance since the mind now hardly rests on them. The three signata involved in the oscillation have by now built up a powerful motive force of detachment. So the mind 'gets weary of' (*nibbidā*) the extremes, and decides to 'step out' (*nissarana*) of the process. Hence he cuts off the thread of selfhood — already made slender as at the stage of neither-perception-nor-non-perception (*nevasaññānāsaññāyatana*) — the thread by which his mind was oscillating under the artificial superstructure of concepts. As he lets go selfhood, he touches the realm of cessation (*so nirodham phusati* - *Poṭṭhapāda Sutta*). Thus the distressful tension abates (*dukkhūpasama*), the mental synergies are allayed (*samkhārūpasama*), and the triple process of conceptualisation subsides (*papañcavūpasama*). Along with the concepts of the

extremes, that of a middle also disappears. In short all concepts lose their significance for him (*papañcasamkhā-pahāna*). As for the relevance of the metaphor of mental pendulum that we have adopted in this connection, attention may now be drawn to the following passage of the *Udāna*<sup>1</sup> dealing with the problem of *Nibbāna*.

*Nissitassa ca calitaṃ, anissitassa calitaṃ natthi, calite asati passaddhi, passadhiyā sati nati na hoti, natiyā asati āgatigati na hoti, āgatigatiyā asati cutūpapāto na hoti, cutūpapāte asati nevidha na huram na ubhayamantare, esevanto dukkhassāti ...* Ud. 81. (See also *Netti*, 65 ff.)

"For him who clings, there is wavering, for him who clings not there is no wavering. Wavering not being, there is calm; calm being, there is no bending; bending not being, there is no coming and going; coming and going not being, there is no death and birth; death and birth not being, there is no 'here', no 'yonder', nor anything between the two. This indeed is the end of Ill."

The word '*nissita*' (lit. 'resting on') is reminiscent of the Buddha's sermon to Kaccāyana on the two extremes. This being so, the rest of the passage accords well with the metaphor. To one who rests on the verbal dichotomy, there is mental unsteadiness or irritability. Hence to him who does not rest on it, there is no such irritability. The absence of irritability brings about tranquility of mind. The tranquil mind has no inclination towards conceptual distinctions of two extremes or of any middle position. This release from the bondage of concepts is itself the end of suffering.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The passage occurs also at M. N. III. 266.

<sup>2</sup> The commentaries try to give a concrete content to the dichotomous concepts occurring in this passage. It appears, however, that the expressions like '*agatī-gatī*' and '*cutūpapāta*' as they are used here, do not refer to actual death and birth but merely stand for the abstract concepts of the same. This will be clear from the following passage where, '*cutūpapāta*' is taken as the causal antecedent of '*āyatim-jāti-jarāmaraṇa*' (future birth, decay and death).

## Abiding in the Void

A more lucid illustration of the fact that the descent into *Suññatā* is gradual and collateral with experience, can be found in the *Cūla Suññata Sutta* of the *Majjhima Nikāya*. There we see Ānanda inquiring of the Buddha with some diffidence whether the Lord actually meant what he said, when he declared at the township of Nagaraka that he used to spend most of the time 'abiding in the void' (*suññatāvihārena*). The Buddha reassures Ānanda, adding that not only in the past but at present also he is used to 'abiding in the void'. Then he proceeds to explain the 'true unperverted and pure descent into the void' (*yathābhuccā avipallatthā parisuddhā suññatāvakkanti*). In keeping with his empirical approach, the Buddha begins from his immediate surroundings - the Monastery of Pubbārāma itself.

... *Seyyathāpi ayam Migāramātu pāsādo suñño hatthigavāssavaḷavena, suñño jātārūparajatena, suñño itthipurisasannipātena; atthi cevidam asuññatam yadidam bhikkhusaṅgham paṭicca ekattam; evameva kho Ānanda, bhikkhu amanasikarivā gāmasaññam amanasikarivā manussasaññam araññasaññam paṭicca manasikaroti ekattam. Tassa araññasaññāya*

*Yato ca kho bhikkhave no ce ceteti, no ca pakappeti no ca anuseti, ārammaṇam etaṃ na hoti viññāṇassa ṭhitiyā, ārammaṇe asati patiṭṭhā viññāṇassa na hoti. Tad appatiṭṭhite viññāṇe avirūlḥe, nati na hoti, natiyā asati āgatigati na hoti, āgatigatiyā asati cutūpapāto na hoti, cutūpapāte asati āyatiṃ jātijārāmaṇam sokaparidevadukkhadomanassupāyāsā nirujjhanti ....,Evametassa kevalassa dukkhakkhandhassa nirodho hotīti.*

— S. N. II. 67

"But, on the other hand, monks, if one does not will, nor entertain thought-constructions, nor has proclivities, then this does not become an object for the persistence of the consciousness. The object not being there, there is no stationing of consciousness; consciousness not being stationed and not having grown, there is no bending; bending not being, there is no coming or going; there being no coming and going, there is no decease or birth; there being no decease or birth, there is no future birth, old age, and death, grief, lamenting, suffering, sorrow, and despair. Such is the cessation of this mass of Ill."

— K. S. II. 46-47

*cittam pakkhandati pasīdati santiṭṭhati adhimuccati. So evam pajānāti: Ye assu darathā gāmasaññam paṭicca, tedha na santi; ye assu darathā manussasaññam paṭicca tedha na santi; atthi cevāyam darathamattā yadidam araññasaññam paṭicca ekattanti. So: 'Suññamidam saññāgātam gāmasaññāyāti pajānāti; suññamidam saññāgātam manussasaññāyāti pajānāti. Atthi cevidam asuññatam yadidam araññasaññam paṭicca ekattanti. Iti yaṃ hi kho tattha na hoti, tena taṃ suññam samanupassati; yaṃ pana tattha avasiṭṭham hoti, taṃ santam idam atthīti pajānāti. Evampissesā Ānanda yathābhuccā avipallatthā parisuddhā suññatāvakkanti bhavati.*

— M. N. III. 104

"As this palace of Migāra's mother is empty of elephants, cows, horses and mares, empty of gold and silver, empty of assemblages of men and women, and there is only this that is not emptiness, that is to say, the oneness grounded on the order of monks, even so Ānanda, a monk, not attending to the perception of village, not attending to the perception of human beings, attends to the oneness grounded on the perception of forest. His mind is satisfied with, pleased with, set on and freed in, the perception of forest. He comprehends thus: 'The disturbances that might be resulting from the perception of village do not exist here; the disturbances that might be resulting from the perception of human beings do not exist here. There is only this degree of disturbance, that is to say, the oneness grounded on the perception of forest.' He regards that which is not there as empty of it. But in regard to what remains there, he comprehends, 'This is' because it is. Thus, Ānanda, this comes to be for him a true, unperverted and pure descent into emptiness..."

In much the same manner as above, the Buddha describes how a monk gradually and by stages attains to the perception of the earth as the object of meditative absorption (*paṭhavisaññā*), the perception of the infinity of space (*ākāsānañcāyatanasaññā*), the perception of the infinity of consciousness (*viññānañcāyatanasaññā*), the perception of nothingness (*ākiñcaññāyatanasaññā*), the perception of neither perception nor-non-perception (*nevasaññānāsaññāyatanasaññā*), and the mental concentration based on the signless (*animittam cetosamādhī*). At the last mentioned stage, he knows that he is experiencing only those forms of 'disturbances' (*darathā*) arising

from the body endowed with the six sense-spheres, due to the fact that he is living. Then again he reflects on the mental concentration on the signless, and his mind delights and abides therein. He now begins to reflect thus: "*Ayampi kho animitto cetosamādhī abhisamkhatō abhisañcetaṃ yato. Yaṃ kho pana kiñci abhisamkhatam abhisañcetaṃ tadaniccam nirodhadhammam . . .*". "This concentration of mind that is signless, is effected and thought out. But whatever is effected and thought out, that is impermanent and liable to cease." Even as he knows and sees thus, his mind is released from the cankers of sense-pleasures, of becoming and of ignorance. In freedom, he has the knowledge that he is freed and he comprehends that he has attained the Goal. He introspects and finds that while those disturbances that might arise from the three cankers are no longer there, he is still subject to whatever disturbances that might arise from his body with its six sense-spheres due to the fact that he is alive. Accordingly he determines the fact of voidness, being faithful to the findings of his introspection. The Buddha sums up the discourse by asserting that this is the true, unperverted, pure and *supreme* descent into voidness. ("*Evamassa esā Ānanda yathābhuccā avippallatthā parisuddhā paramānuttarā suññatāvakkanti bhavati*".)

### Limitations of the Dialectical Approach.

This sutta, which brings out the early Buddhist attitude to *Suññatā*, has a moral for the dialectician himself. The history of Buddhist thought bears witness to the fact that there is a danger lurking behind the dialectical skill to blow up concepts. The dialectician might sometimes develop a complex of his intellectual superiority and proceed to demolish indiscriminately all concepts and theories around him, subjecting them to ridicule. He might throw all ethics to the winds and lull himself into the belief that he has arrived at the Truth. He might even hide his sceptic head ostrich-like in a mass of dialectical verbiage, in a vain attempt to escape the concepts of the 'dull-witted worldlings'. Such wiseacres are haunted and balked by those very concepts the moment they peep out - or maybe even before that — for the simple reason that the paradoxes true of the emancipated sage are not true of them. The purpose of developing a

dialectical consciousness is not to play intellectual hide and seek, but to be alive to the unsound facts of experience within and without oneself. Hence the dialectician has to realise the fact that he is at the mercy of concepts even in his dialectical attempt to demolish concepts. This chastening thought should humble him all the more and prod him on to transcend them with whatever tools there are within his reach. A dream may be proved false in the light of waking experience, but all the same, it is relatively true as a *fact* of experience. Similarly, the deluding character of concepts is a fact of experience and must not be ignored on that account. Concepts, for all their vicious potency to delude us, are not to be blamed *per se*, for they are merely objectifications or projections of our own *taṇhā*, *māna* and *ditṭhi*—our cravings, our conceit, and our views. Hence, in the last analysis, concepts have to be tackled at their source. They are not so much to be demolished, as to be comprehended and transcended. The attempt to dislodge concepts at the purely intellectual level leads to infinite regress in thought, as will be evident from the following dialogue between the Buddha and the wandering ascetic *Dīghanakha*.

"I, good Gotama, speak thus; I am of this view: 'All is not pleasing to me.'

"This view of yours, Aggivessana: 'All is not pleasing to me' - does this view of yours not please you?"

"If this view were pleasing to me, good Gotama, this would be like it too, this would be like it too."

"Now, Aggivessana, when those, the majority in the world, speak thus: 'This would be like it too, this would be like it too' — they do not get rid of that very view and they take up another view. Now, Aggivessana, when those, the minority in the world, speak thus: 'This would be like it too, this would be like it too' — they get rid of that very view and do not take up another view."

— M. L. S. II 170; (M. N. I. 497 ff)

The Buddha, however, granted that *Dīghanakha*'s view is nearer

detachment when compared with its opposite view, 'all is pleasing to me'. Dīghanakha, for a moment, was elated, thinking that the Buddha was praising and upholding his view without reserve. But he was disillusioned when the Buddha went on to show how the very dogmatic view that all views are unacceptable can itself give rise to suffering:

"As to this, Aggivessana, those recluses and brahmins who speak thus and are of this view: 'All is not pleasing to me', if a learned man be there who reflects thus: 'If I were to express this view of mine that: "all is not pleasing to me", and obstinately holding to it and adhering to it, were to say: "This is the very truth, all else is falsehood", there would be for me dispute with two (view - holders): both with whatever recluse or brahmin who speaks thus and is of this view. "All is pleasing to me," and with whatever recluse or brahmin who speaks thus and is of this view: "Part is pleasing to me, part is not pleasing to me" — there would be dispute for me with these two. If there is dispute, there is contention; if there is contention there is trouble; if there is trouble, there is vexation.' So he, beholding this dispute and contention and trouble and vexation for himself, gets rid of that very view and does not take up another view. Thus is the getting rid of these views, thus is the casting away of these views."

Incidentally, this dialogue<sup>1</sup> is of refreshing relevance in view of certain misconceptions among modern philosophers who overestimate the value of dialectics. One might do well to compare it with these observations by Dr. T. R. V. Murti in his defence of the Mādhyamika system. (*The Central Philosophy of Buddhism*):

"... The dialectic as '*Sūnyatā*' is the removal of the constrictions which our concepts, with their practical or sentimental bias, have put on reality. It is the freeing of reality of the artificial and accidental restrictions, and not the denial of reality. *Sūnyatā* is negation of negations; it is thus a reaffirmation of the infinite and inexpressibly

<sup>1</sup> According to the *Dīghanakha Sutta*, Ven. Sāriputta attained arahant hood having listened to this dialogue.

positive character of the Real." (p. 160)

"Criticism of theories is no theory. Criticism is but the awareness of what a theory is, how it is made up; it is not the proposing of a new theory. Negation of positions is not one more position. Dialectic, as analysis, does not impose any new thing: it reveals rather than add or distort. . . ." (p. 161)

"... The conflict of opposed theories and stand-points is resolved in the Mādhyamika by analysing each theory and exhibiting its inner flaw; the dialectic dissolves theories without residue; it does not precipitate another theory. . . ." (p. 305)

"... Criticism is deliverance of the human mind from all entanglements and passions. It is freedom itself. This is the true Mādhyamika standpoint, . . ." (p. 41)

We are afraid that this picture of the dialectic is somewhat overdrawn. Such a complacent attitude towards the omnipotence of the dialectic is not without its dangers. This fact is revealed in certain strands of thought in the Mādhyamika system itself. A typical illustration of the regression in thought may be seen in the series of repeated negations which were supposed to culminate in Absolute-Voidness (*atyanta-sūnyatā*). There was also a tendency to hypostatise the abstract concept of *Sūnyatā* and make it an Absolute — some eternal principle from which everything comes out and to which everything ultimately returns. As regards this latter trend, it is significant that in the *Cūla Suññata Sutta* the Buddha emphasises - though in a very matter-of-fact tone - that '*suññatā*' is as much a relative term as any other. Hence a dual introspective analysis for ascertaining the experiential data of which one's mind is void and of which one's mind is not void, is seen to precede the determination of each stage of the experience of voidness. The recurrent phrase. "He regards that which is not there as empty of it. But in regard to what remains there, he comprehends: 'This is', because it is" brings out this criterion in simple terms. The criterion holds good even for the highest stage of

the experience of voidness (*paramānuttarā suññatāvakkanti*) described in the sutta. At this stage the mind is void of the cankers of sense-desires, existence and ignorance, but there is still a fact of experience which is not void, namely, the painful physical experiences that might arise due to the fact that one is living. So then, there is no necessity to hypostatise the concept of *suññatā*. Instead of resorting to an absolutist conception of voidness by confusing the three path-ways of conventional usage regarding temporal notions, one must be realistic enough to recognise the present as the present, the past as the past, and the future as the future. The stages of voidness would thereby harmonize with the levels of experience.

"Monks, there are these three pathways of conventional usage, of nomenclature, of designation, which are not being confused, have never been confused, will not be confused and are not despised by monks and recluses who are wise. And what three? Whatever material form that is past, has ceased, has undergone change, 'has been' is its reckoning, its appellation, its designation. It is not reckoned in terms of 'is' and 'will be.' Whatever feeling. ...perception, ... preparations, ...consciousness. . . ." <sup>1</sup>

It appears that two words coming up again and again in the *Cūla Suññata Sutta* would, if correctly appreciated, serve to keep the dialectician in his proper place. The first of them, *darathā* ('distresses,' 'disturbances'), painfully reminds him of those unpleasant facts of experience which cannot be deceived by any amount of dialectical skill on his part. The second — which is perhaps the more insinuating — is the word *avipallathā*, 'unperverted', used to describe the pure and proper descent into voidness. This word, by implication, would

<sup>1</sup> *Tayo'me bhikkhave niruttipathā adhivacanapathā paññattipathā asaṃkiṇṇā asaṃkiṇṇapubbā na saṃkīyissanti appatikuṭṭhā samaṇehi brāhmanehi viññūhi. Katame tayo? Yaṃ hi bhikkhave rūpaṃ atītaṃ niruddhaṃ vipariṇataṃ ahoṣīti tassa saṅkhā, ahoṣīti tassa samaññā, ahoṣīti tassa paññatti. Na tassa saṅkhā. atthīti, na tassa saṅkhā bhavissatīti. yā vedanā. ... yā saññā.... ye saṅkhārā ... yaṃ viññānaṃ.... ."*

— S. N. III. 71-72

mean that any other supposed mode of descent into voidness, such as the dialectical method, would be a perversion. A perversion indeed would it be if one contrives to jettison the raft and jubilate over it, even before setting out for the further bank. A better illustration of such perversion may be seen in the parable which gave the *Alagaddūpama Sutta* ('Discourse on the Parable of the Water-snake') its name:

"Monks, it is like a man walking about, aiming after a water-snake, searching after a water-snake, looking about for a water-snake. He might see a large water-snake and he might take hold of it by a coil or by its tail; the water-snake, having rounded on him, might bite him on his hand or arm or on another part of his body; from this cause he might come to dying or to pain like unto dying. What is the reason for this? Monks, it is because of his wrong grasp of the water-snake. Even so, monks, do some foolish men here master dhamma — the discourses in prose, in prose and verse, the expositions, the verses, the uplifting verses, the 'as it was-said', the Birth Stories, the Wonders, the Miscellanies. These, having mastered that dhamma, do not test the meanings of these things by intuitive wisdom, and these things whose meaning is untested by intuitive wisdom do not become clear; they master this dhamma simply for the advantage of reproaching others and for the advantage of gossiping and they do not arrive at that goal for the sake of which they mastered dhamma. These things, badly grasped by them, conduce for a long time to their woe and sorrow. What is the reason for this? It is because of a wrong grasp of things."

— M. L. S. I. 172 (M. N. I. 133)

The amusing story of the man who wished to carry the raft on his head after crossing over, out of a naive sense of gratitude for it, may be compared with the tragic story of the man who seized the snake by its tail. If the former's position is ludicrous, the latter's is dangerous — nay, suicidal. It may also be mentioned that the parable of the water-snake was aimed at the recalcitrant monk *Ariṭṭha*, who misrepresented the Buddha regarding his strictures on sense desires. *Ariṭṭha's* misconceived theory was couched in these words: "*Tathāhaṃ bhagavatā dhammaṃ desitaṃ ājānāmi yathā ye'me antarāyikā dhammā vuttā bhagavatā te paṭisevato nālaṃ antarāyāya.*" "In so far as I understand the dhamma taught by the Lord, it is that in following those things called 'stumbling-blocks' by



the Lord, there is no stumbling-block at all." We have no clear indication in the sutta<sup>1</sup> as to the dialectical process through which he arrived at his '-paradoxical' conclusion; but the fact that he obstinately held on to his view in the face of searching criticism by his fellow monks seems to suggest that he did have some dialectics in him. We seem to get a hint in the same direction in the Buddha's words cited above. Perhaps here we are already dealing with an early instance of a perversion of dialectics leading to moral anarchy. The attempt to ignore the needs of psychology and ethics in the haste to grasp intellectually the metaphysical subtleties nearer the Goal may be figuratively compared with the attitude of the man who seized the snake by the tail before subduing it. Though there were attempts to assert the importance of ethics, the *Mādhyamika* system with its ruthless attack on concepts tended to overshoot itself in its dialectical ebullience. Thus much of the significant service rendered by that system of thought in exposing the futility of the preoccupation with concepts in '*Hīnayāna*' circles, was ultimately offset by its own extravagances. It was rightly affirmed by the *Mādhyamikas*, that the Buddha had recommended the abandonment of all views including that of *sūnyatā*.<sup>2</sup> This affirmation, however, was belied as the system lacked those 'built-in' safeguards against perversion that are to be found in the Pali Nikāyas. According to the early Buddhist standpoint,

<sup>1</sup> According to the Commentary (M. A. II. 103), Ariṭṭha's reasoning proceeded on the following lines: "These householders, while enjoying the five strands of sense - pleasures, become Stream-winners and Once-Returners. Monks also see pleasant shapes with their eyes. . . experience pleasant contacts with their bodies, and they use soft rugs and coverlets. All this is allowable. Why, then, not the sight, the sound, the smell, the taste and the touch of women? These too are allowable."

<sup>2</sup> *Sūnyatā sarvadr̥ṣṭīnām - proktā nihsaranam̐ jinaiḥ,  
yeṣāṃ tu sūnyatādr̥ṣṭis- tānasādhyān babhāsire.*

M. K. XIII 8

"*Sūnyatā* has been preached by the Buddha as the abandonment of all views; but those for whom *sūnyatā* itself is a view -they are said to be incurable."

the Middle Path consisted neither in the confrontation of every thesis with its antithesis, nor in their synthesis, nor again in their total refutation, but in a balanced understanding of the relative and pragmatic value of concepts. Dialectical consciousness, therefore, as an intellectual experience of the ultimate futility of concepts, is a necessary but not a sufficient condition for the attainment of the Goal. Nor is it a panacea for the all-pervasive *dukkha*. It is no doubt an essential ingredient in *sammā diṭṭhi*, which is but the first step in the Path. The ethical Middle Path lies right through conceptual formulations as steps of training, which are to be made use of with circumspection and detachment. The dialectician pledged to logical consistency might regard this position as being riddled with contradictions. We have on record a typical instance of such an attitude in the words of the brahmin Māgandīya in the *Māgandīya Sutta* (*Sn.*).

*Na diṭṭhiyā na sutiyā na ñāṇena Māgandiyāti Bhagavā –  
sīlabbatenāpi visuddhimāha  
adiṭṭhiyā assutiyā aññāṇā  
asīlatā abbatā nopi tena  
ete ca nissajja anuggahāya  
santo anissāya bhavaṃ na jappe.*

— Vs. 839

"It is said that purity does not result from views, learning, knowledge, holy vows and ascetic practices, *O Māgandīya*," (so said the Buddha), "nor does it arise in the absence of views, learning, knowledge, holy vows and ascetic practices. Abandoning them, grasping none of them, and not dependent on any of them, one should not crave for existence."

*No ce kira diṭṭhiyā na sutiyā na ñāṇena - iti Māgandīyo –  
sīlabbatenāpi visuddhimāha  
adiṭṭhiyā assutiyā aññāṇā  
asīlatā abbatā no pi tena  
maññemahaṃ momuhameva dhammaṃ  
diṭṭhiyā eke paccenti suddhiṃ.*

— Vs. 840

"If you say that purity does not arise from views, learning, knowledge, holy vows and ascetic practices," (so said Māgandiya) "and also if you say that it does not arise in the absence of views, learning, knowledge, holy vows and ascetic practices, then I consider that your teaching is foolish, for some arrive at purity through views."

A detailed exposition of the validity of this apparently contradictory position occurs in the *Rathavinīta Sutta* (M. N.) in the form of a dialogue between *Sāriputta* and *Puṇṇa Mantāniputta*. The simile of the relay of seven chariots, by which *Puṇṇa* illustrates the inner consistency of the seven stages of purity, will serve to drive home the twin principles of relativity and pragmatism.

"It is as though, brother, while King Pasenadi was staying in Sāvatti, something to be done urgently should arise in Sāketa, and seven relay chariots would be arranged for him between Sāvatti and Sāketa. Then, brother, King Pasenadi of Kosala, having left Sāvatti by the palace gate, might mount the first chariot in the relay, and by means of the first chariot in the relay he would reach the second chariot in the relay. . . the third.... the fourth. . . the fifth. . . the sixth. . . the seventh. . . and by means of the seventh chariot in the relay he would reach the palace gate in Sāketa.

". . . Even so, brother, purity of moral habit is of purpose as far as purity of mind; purity of mind is of purpose as far as purity of view.... purity through crossing over doubt. . . purity of knowledge and insight into the Way and what is not the Way. . . purity of knowledge and insight into the course. . . . purity arising from knowledge and insight. . . purity arising from knowledge and insight is of purpose as far as utter *Nibbāna* without attachment. Brother, the holy-life under the Lord is lived for the purpose of utter *Nibbāna* without attachment."

—ML. S. I. 192

It appears that the difference in approach between early Buddhism and the Mādhyamika system towards the problem of concepts hinges on what might be called a subtle shift of emphasis in the interpretation of the terms '*suñña*' and '*attā*'. In the Pali Canon we

find a definition of the word '*suñña*' given by the Buddha himself in reply to the following question of Ānanda:

*Suñño loko suñño lokoti bhante vuccati. Kittāvata nu kho bhante suñño lokoti vuccati?*

*Yasmā ca kho Ānanda suññaṃ attena vā attaniyena vā tasmā suñño loko'ti vuccati. Kiñca Ānanda suññaṃ attena vā attaniyena vā?*

*"Cakkhuṃ kho Ānanda suññaṃ attena vā attaniyena vā... rūpā... cakkhuvīññānaṃ.. cakkhusamphasso suñño attena vā attaniyena vā...pe. . . Yampidam manosamphassapaccayā uppajjati vedayitāṃ sukhaṃ vā dukkhaṃ vā adukkhamasukhaṃ vā tampi suññaṃ attena vā attaniyena vā."*

—S. N. IV. 54

- 'Void is the world! Void is the world!' they say, O Lord. Pray, Lord, how far does this saying go?"

"Because the world is void of the self, Ānanda, or of what belongs to the self, therefore, is it said: 'Void is the world'. And what, Ānanda, is void of the self or of what belongs to the self? Eye, visual objects . . . eye-consciousness. . . . eye-contact ... and whatever feeling, happy, unhappy or neutral, that arises due to mind contact, that too is void of the self or of what belongs to the self"

The world is called 'void' in the sense that it is devoid of a self or of anything belonging to a self. It must be noted that the 'world' in this definition corresponds to the totality of sense-experience based on the six senses. The implication is therefore that no element of experience can be regarded as one's self or as belonging to oneself. '*Attā*' has to be taken in its subjective sense as the notion of a soul or an ego. Its characteristic is the power to own and control. The Buddha has clarified this fact in the very first sermon he delivered on the characteristics of *anattā* (*Anattalakkhana Sutta*, Vin. I. 13, S. N. III. 67).

"Body, monks, is not self. Now were this body self, monks, this body would not tend to sickness, and one might get the chance of saying in regard to body, 'Let body become thus for me, let body not become thus for me'. But inasmuch, monks, as body is not self,

therefore body tends to sickness, and one does not get the chance of saying in regard to body, 'Let body become thus for me, let body not become thus for me.'

"Feeling is not self. . Perception is not self.... preparations are not self. . . consciousness is not self. . . ."

"What do you think about this, monks? Is body permanent or impermanent?"

"Impermanent, Lord."

"But is that which is impermanent painful or pleasurable?"

"Painful, Lord."

"But is it fit to consider that which is impermanent, painful, of a nature to change, as 'This is mine,' 'This am I,' 'This is myself?'"

"It is not, Lord."

"Is feeling . . . perception . . . preparations . . . consciousness?...."

"Wherefore, monks, whatever is body, past, future, or present, or internal or external, or gross or subtle, or low or excellent, whether it is far or near — all body should by means of right wisdom be seen, as it really is, thus: This is not mine, this am I not, this is not my self.

" . . . . Whatever feeling.... perception. . . . preparations.... consciousness. . . ."

— Bk. of D., IV 20-2

Thus the main prong of attack is levelled at the concept of the soul as the controlling agent who is capable of experiencing happiness, which necessarily has to be permanent in order to be perfect. It is true that what gives rise to this notion is the idea of permanence or substantiality, but this latter is sufficiently rendered by the term '*nicca*'. The illusion of substantiality is linked with the psychological impulse for happiness (*sukha*), which in its turn sustains the illusion of the ego (*attā*). Now, the *Mādhyamika* system often seems to stress this notion of substantiality underlying the illusion of an '*ātman*', thereby giving an objective twist to that word. As already indicated, the word '*nicca*' by itself does sufficient justice

to this primary notion of substantiality which originates at the cognitive level. In '*sukha*' and '*attā*' we have the affective and conative reactions to the illusion of permanence. Hence selfhood is to be found at the innermost conative impulses within the mind. It is not something out there in the material objects or in concepts, for that matter. It is what we attribute to them or superimpose on them. Therefore, to believe that by merely demolishing concepts or theories one can rise above them is to stop at the fringe of the problem. In coining the two expressions, '*pudgala nairātmya*' and '*dharmānairātmya*', the *Mādhyamikas* seem to have ignored the original significance of the term '*anattā*'. According to the early Buddhist point of view, there can be no basis for such a distinction since the *dharmas* or elements, when they are regarded as being one's self or as belonging to one's self, would thereby become objects of his mind and part of his five aggregates. When it was said that one should look upon all *dhammas* as *anattā*, it only meant that one has to regard them as not being one's own self or a part thereof. Perhaps a better way to bring out the crux of the present argument would be to pose the question whether there will be any *dharmānairātmya* left over to be realised, when one has realised the so-called *pudgala-nairātmya*. It might of course be urged in mitigation that what gave rise to the above two expressions, was the very dogmatic attitude of the '*Hīnayānists*' in clinging to the *dharmas*. But this does not appear to be sufficient justification, since that dogmatic attitude of the '*Hīnayānists*' is merely an indication that they have not grasped the full significance of the *nairātmya* doctrine. If they had, they would no longer be dogmatic with regard to the *dharmas* which are the objects of the sixth sense. In any case, this confusion as to the basic issues involved seems to have had its repercussions on the *Mādhyamika* conception of *sūnyatā*. As against this, the conception of *suññatā* in the Pali *Nikāyas* was always defined in relation to experience. Even when it is said that one should always look upon the world as 'void', with mindfulness, it

is to be taken as a step of training in detachment.<sup>1</sup> However, as regards the experience of *suññatā*, one has to conform to the levels of *suññatā* described in the *Cūla Suññata Sutta*. We find further illustration of this particular approach in the '*Suññakathā*' of the *Paṭisambhidāmagga* (I. 117 ff), where twenty-five modes of voidness are enumerated and defined. Even the concept of '*suñña-suñña*', for all its apparent similarity to '*sūnyatā-sūnyatā*' of the Mādhyamikas, merely implies the voidness as to selfhood in its specific application to the six senses. The principle of relativity in the determination of voidness may be seen all along the list of definitions. The last, which is called '*paramatthasuñña*', is particularly significant in its formulation. As the highest stage of voidness, one would expect it to be termed an Absolute devoid of relation to anything. But this is not so, and it still has relation to *awareness* since this stage of voidness is called '*sampajānassa pavattapariyādānam*' *sabbasuññatānam paramattha-suññam*<sup>2</sup> (The highest of all forms of

*Suññato lokam avekkhassu - Mogharāja sadā sato  
attānudiṭṭhīm ūhacca - evam maccutaro siyā  
evam lokam avekkhantam - maccurājā na passati*

— Sn. Vs. 1119

"Regard the world as void; and e'er  
Alert, uproot false view of self.  
Thus, Mogharajah., thou wouldst be  
Death's crosser; and regarding thus  
The world, death's king doth see thee not."

— W. C. E. B.

<sup>2</sup> ....*Atha vā pana sampajānassa anupādisesāya nibbānadhātuyā  
parinibbāyantassa idañceva cakkhuppavattam pariyādiyati aññañca  
cakkhuppavattam na uppajjati: idañceva sotapavattam pe .  
.ghānapavattam.. jivhāpavattam .... kāyapavattam .. manopavattam  
pariyādiyati aññañca manopavattam na uppajjati. Idam sampajānassa ...  
pavattapariyādānam sabbasuññatānam paramatthasuññanti.*

— Paṭis. I. 184.

"Or else, in him who is mindfully passing away into the Nibbāna-element leaving no substrata, this visual process is extinguished and no other visual process arises, this auditory process is extinguished and no new one arises. . . . olfactory process. . . gustatory process.. tactile process. . mental process... This is the highest of all forms of voidness in which there is a mindful extinction of all processes."

voidness wherein one *mindfully* exhausts all existence"). In view of the fact that this refers to the final attainment of Parinibbāna of the Emancipated One we may regard this as a clear indication that the conception of *suññatā* in early Buddhism was always relative and experiential.

The upshot of the above discussion on *suññatā* would be the revelation that the dialectician, if he seriously intends escaping from all views and concepts, should *disown* and transcend them rather than demolish them *in toto*. As the objects of the sixth sense, concepts are as much a fact of experience as are the objects of the other senses. Hence they will continue in the world as worldly conventions in spite of all their flaws and contradictions. The Middle Path, therefore, consists essentially in the pragmatic approach of choosing and using what is essential for the purpose, without attachment. This approach is abundantly clear in a certain criterion which the Buddha is seen declaring so often in the suttas. For the purpose of quotation, we may choose the following context which has a striking relevance to the present discussion.

"Some things, *Poṭṭhapāda*, I have preached and laid down categorically and some other things non-categorically. And what, *Poṭṭhapāda*, are those things that I have preached and laid down non-categorically? . . . Is the world eternal? . . . Is the world not eternal? . . . Is the world finite? . . . Is the world infinite? . . . Is the soul the same as the body? . . . Is the soul one thing and the body another? . . . Does the Perfect One exist after death? . . . Does he not exist after death? . . . Does he both exist and not exist after death? . . . Does he neither exist nor not exist after death? . . .

"And why, O *Poṭṭhapāda*, have I preached and laid down those things non-categorically? Because, *Poṭṭhapāda*, these are not calculated to profit, are not concerned with the Dhamma, they do not redound even to the elements of right conduct, nor to detachment, nor to purification from lusts, nor to quietude, nor to tranquillisation of heart, nor to real knowledge, nor to insight, nor to *Nibbāna*. Therefore

is it that I have preached and laid down those things non categorically.

"And what, *Poṭṭhapāda*, are those things that I have laid down categorically? This is suffering - this, *Poṭṭhapāda*, is a thing I have preached and laid down categorically. This is the arising of suffering. . . . This is the cessation of suffering. . . . This is the path leading to the cessation of suffering . . . .

"And why, *Poṭṭhapāda*, have I preached and laid them down categorically? These, *Poṭṭhapāda*, are calculated to profit, are concerned with the Dhamma, redound to the elements of right conduct, to detachment, to purification from lusts, to quietude, to tranquillisation of heart, to real knowledge, to insight, to *Nibbāna*. Therefore is it that I have preached and laid down these things categorically."

—D. B. I. 254 f.

From this it appears that the Buddha was sometimes categorical and sometimes not, in preaching or in answering questions, and the criterion is declared to be pragmatic and ethical. The validity of this criterion as regards the Buddha's consistent refusal to give a categorical reply to any of the ten Indeterminate Points (*dasa avyākata-vatthu*) has often been disputed by scholars both ancient and modern. Some, like Prof. A. B. Keith (*Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 63), saw in it a "general poverty of philosophical constructive power" on the part of the Buddha, and treated him as "a genuine agnostic." Some others, similarly convinced that the criterion lacked in depth and cogency, proceeded to unravel the secret of the Buddha's silence in regard to the *avyākatas*, in purely dialectical terms. One of the earliest attempts in this latter direction is to be seen in the *Mādhayamika* system. It is very likely that they succeeded to some extent in unravelling this secret. But it appears that in their enthusiasm to discover the secret of the Buddha's silence, they lost sight of the *value* of that secret. The value of a secret lies not so much in the secret itself, as in the *reasons* which made it a secret. In order to find these reasons, one has to retrace one's steps to the above pragmatic criterion given by the Buddha himself. If one needs a deeper evaluation of this criterion one will get it in the *Cūla Mālunkya Sutta* (M. N.).

The inquisitive monk *Mālunkyaputta* gets it into his head to solve once and for all the problem of the Indeterminate Points. He approaches the Buddha and challenges him to give categorical answers to those points on the threat of his leaving the Order. He even makes bold to say that the Buddha should be honest enough to confess his ignorance, instead of evading the issues. Here then, we have an open revolt in the ranks against the Buddha's attitude. But it was not the Buddha who gave in. He rejoined in a sterner fashion, retorting whether there was any prior agreement between him and *Mālunkyaputta* that he would declare those ten points if the latter entered the Order. *Mālunkyaputta* confessed that there was not, and the Buddha humbled him with the words: - *Evam sante moghapurisa ko santo kam paccācikkhasi?*" ("This being so, foolish man, who are you that you are disavowing?")

A very unkind and agnostic attitude indeed, on the part of a teacher who professes to be compassionate and fully enlightened—one might be tempted to conclude. But the Buddha goes on. He goes on to explain to *Mālunkyaputta* that even if one were to declare that one would not live the holy life under him until he answered those ten points, he would never give in. Now comes a parable which, as in so many other instances, embodies a deep truth. It gives the tragic instance of a man shot with a poisoned arrow who refuses to allow the surgeon to treat him until he gets answers to a series of delirious questions regarding the man who shot him, and the bow and arrow used. That obstinate man is prepared even to sacrifice his life for his curiosity. With this parable the Buddha emphasises the fact that he has laid aside the ten points because they are irrelevant to the attainment of *Nibbāna*, and advises *Mālunkyaputta* to treat the indeterminates as indeterminates, and the determined points as so determined. These latter refer to the Four Noble Truths. We are told at the end of the sutta that *Malunkyaputta* was satisfied with this exhortation. But not so the dialectician who valued the critical spirit of inquiry above everything else. To him, the compassionate reticence of the surgeon, and the pragmatic reasons given by him, were not at all acceptable. So he pressed on regardless, and by the time he returned to the 'Peerless Surgeon' (*sallakatto anuttaro*), burdened with dossiers of his exhaustive as

well as exhausting critical inquiry into the culprit, the bow and the arrow, his condition was well nigh critical. He had used the dialectical principle with such rigour that it shook the very pragmatic and ethical foundations of Buddhism. The value and wisdom of the Buddha's silence thus came to be proved in retrospect. This approach shows a lack of appreciation of the vital link - *dukkha* - that obtains between *anicca* and *anattā*. The early Buddhist attitude was to realise the imperfections of language and logic by observing the internal and external conflict it brought about. This is extremely clear in the *Aṭṭhaka Vagga* of the *Sutta Nipāta*. It was not considered necessary to counter every possible thesis with an antithesis or to turn every theory inside out by the *reductio-ad-absurdum* method merely as an exercise in dialectics, thereby adding to the conflict. It took the more radical attitude of grasping the general principle involved, namely, that of suffering, which provides the true impetus for the spiritual endeavour to transcend all theories by eradicating the subjective bias.

From the foregoing it should be clear that in early Buddhism we have the unique phenomenon of an enlightened dialectical awareness paving the way for a down-to-earth ethical consciousness. Far from undermining spiritual values by encouraging vain sophistry, it reasserted their importance by elevating experience above theoretical knowledge. The pragmatic reasons given by the Buddha with regard to his preaching of the Four Noble Truths in categorical terms, should not be taken as a mere edifying call to practise the *Dhamma*. In view of the Buddha's attitude towards the totality of concepts as such, we may say that pragmatism is the only justification for his preaching those Noble Truths. Words have a value only to the extent that they indicate elements of experience. However, even where words fail, experience triumphs. By defining 'voidness' in terms of experience, early Buddhism also pointed out that what is void as to concepts is not devoid of happiness. A discussion of the Goal of spiritual endeavours in Buddhism in philosophical terms, so as to mean the utter cessation of the world of concepts, might sometimes give the impression that here we have the dismal prospect of a mental vacuity. Hence it is that the Buddha, towards the end of a philosophical discourse on the gradual attainment of the cessation of perceptions and sensations,

forestalls a possible objection by *Poṭṭhapāda* and reassures him of the positive experiential content of happiness characteristic of that attainment:

"Now it may well be, *Poṭṭhapāda*, that you think: 'Evil dispositions may be put away, the dispositions that tend to purification may increase, one may continue to see face to face and by himself come to realise the full perfection and grandeur of wisdom, **but one may continue sad!**' Now that, *Poṭṭhapāda*, would not be accurate judgment. When such conditions are fulfilled, then there will be **joy and happiness and peace, and in continual mindfulness and self-mastery, one will dwell at ease.**"  
— D. B. I. 260

We have already seen how the *Cūla Suññata Sutta* puts across the same idea in negative terms, with the help of the word '*darathā*'. But by far the most edifying of all attempts to suggest the positive experiential content of *Nibbāna* is the use of the lotus metaphor. The whole philosophy of the transcendence of the world, which we have earlier stated in paradoxical terms, finds fuller expression through the lotus motif.

*Udabindu yathāpi pokkhare  
padume vāri yathā na lippati  
evaṃ muni nopalippati  
yadidaṃ diṭṭhasutammutesu vā.* — Sn. 812

"Even as the drop of water on the lotus-leaf does not smear it, or as water smears not the lotus flower, so aloof is the sage who does not cling to whatever he has seen, heard or sensed."

*Yehi vivitto vicareyya loke  
na tāni uggayha vadeyya nāgo  
elambujam kaṇṭakam vārijam yathā  
jalena pamkena canūpalittam  
evaṃ munī santivado agiddho  
kāme ca loke ca anūpalitto.*

— Sn. 845

"Being detached from whatever views one wanders forth in this world, the perfect one does not enter into dispute grasping them; even as the white lotus sprung up in the water with its thorny stalk is not sullied by water and mud, even so the sage who professes peace and is

free from avarice is not sullied by sense desires and by the world."

### The Lotus and the Fire

This, then, is the brighter side of the utter allayment of *papañca*. It marks the efflorescence of the personality composed of the five aggregates. The transmutation brought about through detachment is so ineffably sublime that it enables the sage to live **in** the world while not being **of** it. He is emotionally imperturbable (*anejo*) and intellectually incapable of being led astray (*nippapañco*). The data of the six senses, both pleasant and unpleasant, in the form of the eight worldly conditions,<sup>1</sup> fall on him only to roll off with pearl like grace, like the drops of water on the lotus petal or leaf — leaving the mind unsullied. No less significant are the implications of the metaphor as to the beauty and fragrance of the flower, which can be traced neither to the mud below it, nor to the water around it, nor to the roots and leaves of the plant itself.<sup>2</sup> Neither can they arise without those factors — truly an incomprehensible position which defies language and logic. But the purity, the beauty, and the fragrance of the lotus are undeniable facts of experience for those around it, as much as is the aloofness of the flower. The wisdom and compassion of the sage, and his profound tranquillity, bear the same relation to our powers of understanding and expression.

If the life of the emancipated sage is a puzzle for us, his death is even more puzzling. What becomes of him when he passes away — does he exist or does he not? Both conjunctively or neither disjunctively? This, as we saw earlier, was one of the problems which found expression in four of the ten indeterminates (*avyākata*). All the four alternative propositions were laid aside by the Buddha, and again the scholars are in a quandary. Various interpretations of the Buddha's stand on this problem have been bandied back and forth. But the reasons for laying aside those four alternatives are sometimes explained in the suttas to the satisfaction of the respective

---

<sup>1</sup> Gain and loss, honour and dishonour, praise and blame, happiness and unhappiness.

<sup>2</sup> See Dh. 58, 59 (*Puppha Vagga*).

interlocutors. The term 'Tathāgata' in its wider sense of the Perfect Man (*uttamapuriso paramapuriso paramapattipatto*, S. N. IV. 399) is applicable to the Buddha as well as to the emancipated monk (*vimuttacitto bhikkhu*, M. N. I. 140, 486). The four alternatives seek to categorise him in terms of existence and non-existence. We have already seen how at A. N. IV. 68 these four alternatives were described as products of craving (*taṇhāgata*), of sense-perceptions (*saññāgata*), of imagination (*maññita*), of conceptual prolificity (*papañcita*), and of delusion (*vippaṭisāro*). The implication, therefore, is that these four propositions are fallacious and misleading. This fact is clearly brought out in the *Aggivaṅṅagotta Sutta* (M. N), There the Buddha exposes their fallacy to Vacchagotta with the help of the following simile of fire.

"What do you think about this, Vaccha? If a fire were blazing in front of you, would you know: 'This fire is blazing in front of me'?"

"Good Gotama, if a fire were blazing in front of me, I should know: 'This fire is blazing in front of me'."

"But if, Vaccha, someone were to question you thus: 'This fire that is blazing in front of you - what is the reason that this is blazing?' — what would you, Vaccha, reply when questioned thus?"

"If, good Gotama, someone were to question me thus: 'This fire . . . - is blazing?' — I, good Gotama, on being questioned thus, would reply thus: 'This fire that is blazing in front of me - this fire is blazing because of a supply of grass and sticks'."

"If that fire that was in front of you, Vaccha, were to be quenched, would you know: 'This fire that was in front of me has been quenched'?"

"If, good Gotama, that fire that was in front of me were to be quenched, I would know: 'This fire.... has been quenched'."

"But if someone were to question you thus, Vaccha: 'That fire that was in front of you and that has been quenched — to which direction has that fire gone from here, to the East or West or North or South?' - on being questioned thus, what would you, Vaccha, reply?"

"It does not apply, good Gotama. For good Gotama, that fire blazed because of a supply of grass and sticks, yet from having totally consumed this and from the lack of other fuel, being without fuel it is reckoned to be quenched (*nibbuto tveva saṅkham gacchati*)."

— ML. S. II. 166

Vaccha is made to admit the fact that the attempt to locate a fire that has 'gone out' is a ludicrous category-mistake caused by the enslavement to linguistic conventions. Fire, as one of the most volatile of elements, provides a homely illustration of the fact of dependent arising and cessation. When Vaccha had grasped this fact, the Buddha brings in the analogy of the Tathāgata.

*Evameva kho Vaccha yena rūpena Tathāgataṃ paññāpayamāno paññāpeyya, taṃ rūpaṃ Tathāgatassa pahīnaṃ ucchinnamūlaṃ tālāvattukataṃ anabhāvakataṃ āyatiṃ anuppādadhammaṃ, rūpasamkhā vimutto kho Vaccha Tathāgato gambhīro appameyyo duppariyogāho seyyathāpi mahāsamuddo; uppajjati ti na upeti, na uppajjati ti na upeti, uppajjati ca na ca uppajjati ti na upeti, neva uppajjati na nuppajjati ti pi na upeti, yāya vedanāya. ... yāya saññāya. ... yehi saṅkhārehi. . yena viññāṇena, ... . na upeti ti'.*  
— ibid.

"Even so, Vaccha, that material shape by which one designating the Tathāgata might designate him — that material shape has been got rid of by the Tathāgata, cut off at the root, made like unto a palm-tree stump, that can come to no further existence and is not liable to arise again in the future. Freed from the concept of material shape is the Tathāgata, Vaccha, he is deep, immeasurable, unfathomable as is the great ocean. 'Arises' does not apply; 'does not arise' — does not apply; 'both arises and does not arise' — does not apply; 'neither arises nor does not arise' — does not apply. That feeling.... That perception.... . Those preparations. . . . That consciousness... does not apply."

The Buddha points out that a Tathāgata has already got rid of each of the five aggregates of attachment whereby one might speak of a Tathāgata in the strict sense of the term. He is thus released from the

concept (*saṅkhā*)<sup>1</sup> of form, of feelings, of perceptions, of preparations, and of consciousness. The egoistic clinging which justifies those concepts is extinct in him. Since the Tathāgata no longer identifies himself with any of those aggregates, to speak of a Tathāgata's rebirth would be as meaningless as the attempt to locate the fire that has 'gone out', 'released' from its fuel.

In the *Avyākata Samyutta* (S. N) the Buddha is seen explaining to Vacchagotta the difference between the ordinary and the emancipated individual with the analogy of fire:

*"Seyyathāpi. Vaccha, aggi saupādāno jalati no anupādāno evameva khvāhaṃ Vaccha saupādānassa upapattiṃ paññāpemi no anupādānassāti.*

*Yasmim̐ pana bho Gotama samaye acci vātena khittā dūrampi gacchati imassa pana bhavaṃ Gotamo kim̐ upādānasmim̐ paññāpeti ti.*

*Yasmim̐ Vaccha samaye acci vātena khittā dūrampi gacchati, tam ahaṃ vātupādānaṃ vadāmi, vāto hissa Vaccha tasmim̐ samaye upadānaṃ hoti ti.*

*Yasmiñca pana bho Gotama samaye imañca kāyaṃ nikkhipati, satto ca aññatarāṃ kāyaṃ anupatto hoti imassa pana bhavaṃ Gotamo kim̐ upādānasmim̐ paññāpeti ti.*

*"Yasmiñca kho Vaccha samaye imañca kāyaṃ nikkhipati satto ca aññatarāṃ kāyaṃ anupatto hoti taṃ ahaṃ taṅhupādānaṃ vadāmi, taṅhā hissa Vaccha tasmim̐ samaye upādānaṃ hoti ti. "*

S. N. IV. 399-340

"Just as, Vaccha, a fire with fuel blazes up, but not without fuel, even so Vaccha, I declare rebirth to be for him who has grasping

<sup>1</sup> Compare the expression '*papañca-saṅkhā-pahāna*' with '*rūpasamkhāvimutto*' and its equivalents relating to the other aggregates. This is further proof of the fact that the word '*saṅkhā*' when used in connection with '*papañca*' conveys the sense of reckoning, concept or linguistic convention.



"But, master Gotama, at the time when a flame flung by the wind goes a very long way, as to fuel, what says the master Gotama about this?"

"At the time when a flame, Vaccha, flung by the wind goes a very long way, I declare that flame to be supported by the wind. At that time, Vaccha, the wind is its fuel."

"But, master Gotama, at the time when a being lays aside this body and rises up again in another body — what does master Gotama declare to be the fuel for that?"

"At that time, Vaccha, when a being lays aside this body and rises up again in another body, for that I declare craving to be the fuel. Indeed, Vaccha, craving is on that occasion the fuel."

— K. S. IV. 280-1.

It is significant that the term '*Nibbāna*', owing to its metaphorical connections with the 'going out' of a fire, is itself suggestive enough to forestall the above quadrilemma. As in the case of the fire, it is a linguistic convention (*'nibbuto'ti samkham gacchati*) which should not be transgressed or misconstrued. In addition to its psychological import as the allayment of the triple fires of lust, hatred and delusion, it also has this eschatological significance in the sense of the complete allayment of the conflagration that is *samsāric* suffering (*dukkhanirodha*). However, these metaphorical implications underlying the term '*Nibbāna*' seem to have become obscured in course of time due to far-fetched commentarial exegesis.<sup>1</sup>

In the *Anurādha Sutta* (S. N. IV. 380 ff) we find the monk *Anurādha* seeking the Buddha's advice as to how he should meet the arguments of the heretics when they raise the quadrilemma, relating to the *Tathāgata*. He confesses he had already faced such an unpleasant situation and that he took up the position that the state of the *Tathāgata* after death can be predicated in other than those four ways. The heretics concerned had then ridiculed him as an incompetent new-comer in the Order, and now he is at a loss to

<sup>1</sup> see Vism. XVI. 67 - 74; Vbh. A. 51f.

understand how he can put up a reasoned defence in any such future debate. Would the Lord please explain the correct position? Now the Buddha at once proceeds to catechise *Anurādha*, reminding him of the impermanence and suffering characteristic of the five aggregates, thus convincing him of the fact of *anattā*.<sup>1</sup> He also points out that the appellation '*Tathāgata*' can neither be identified with any of the five aggregates, nor can it be distinguished from them. Thereby he disapproves of *Anurādha*'s view that the state of the *Tathāgata* can be predicated in other than those four ways, since the four alternatives exhaust the universe of discourse. Then the Buddha makes the strange revelation that the *Tathāgata* cannot be said to exist in the strict sense of the term even here and now, not to speak of his existence hereafter.

*Ettha te Anurādha diṭṭheva dhamme saccato thetato tathāgate anupalabbhiyamāne kallaṃ nu taṃ veyyākaraṇaṃ 'Yo so āvuso tathāgato uttamapuriso paramapuriso paramapattipatto taṃ tathāgato aññatrimehi catuhi ṭhānehi paññāpayamāno paññāpeti 'Hoti Tathāgato parammaraṇā ti vā.....*

"Then, *Anurādha*, since in just this life a *Tathāgata* is not met with in truth, in reality, is it proper for you to pronounce this of him: Friends, he who is a *Tathāgata*, a super-man, one of the best of beings, a winner of the highest gain, is proclaimed in other than these four ways: 'The *Tathāgata* exists after death'...."

*Anurādha* confesses that his previous conclusion was wrong. Finally the Buddha sums up the correct position in these words-

*Pubbe cāhaṃ Anurādha etarahi ca dukkhañceva paññāpemi dukkhassa ca nirodhaṃ.*

"Both formerly and now also, *Anurādha*, it is just suffering and the cessation of suffering that I proclaim."

This sutta too thus makes it sufficiently plain that the four alternatives are laid aside because they are irrelevant and meaningless from the standpoint of the Dhamma. Once the misconceptions underlying that quadrilemma are cleared up

<sup>1</sup> At S. N. III. 109ff, the Venerable *Sāriputta* employs a similar catechism to dispel the annihilationist view of *Yamaka*.

analytically, the quadrilemma dissolves of itself. The solvent is none other than the law of Dependent Arising itself. The term 'Tathāgata', as much as any other concept, is a convenient linguistic symbol used to comprehend a complex process of conditionally arisen mental and material phenomena. It exists neither in the five aggregates nor outside of them. However, though he is composed of the five aggregates, the Tathāgata has this difference from the ordinary 'bundles' of aggregates—the worldlings—that he no longer cherishes the illusion of an ego and as such he does not cling to any of the five aggregates. As we have already mentioned, this makes him so incomprehensible from the worldling's standpoint that he is regarded as "deep, immeasurable, unfathomable as is the great ocean."

Since there is no more clinging there is no more rebirth, but this fact cannot be indicated through the second alternative, because there the term '*Tathāgata*' has the implicit prejudice of a soul. To do so would be to leave the door open for the annihilationist view. The charge of annihilation does not arise when one grasps the law of Dependent Arising and the fact that the Buddha merely preached about suffering and its cessation. There can be no annihilation since there is no soul to be annihilated. Hence the final cessation in *Nibbāna* is no more lamentable than is the death of an unborn son. There is no room for eternal entities in terms of *Tathāgatas*, for they are those who comprehend and proclaim the law of Dependent Arising, which is said to endure in the world whether *Tathāgatas* arise or not.<sup>1</sup> *Tathāgatas* themselves are specific conflagrations of suffering which 'go out' after an incandescent flicker, as they no

<sup>1</sup> *Katamo ca bhikkhave paticcasamuppādo? Jātipaccayā bhikkhave jarāmaranāṃ uppādā vā Tathāgatānaṃ anuppādā vā Tathāgatānaṃ ʔhitāva sā dhātu dhammaṅṅhitatā dhammaniyāmatā idappaccayatā.*

— S. N. II. 25.

"What, O monks, is Dependent Arising? Conditioned by birth is decay and death —whether, O monks, there be an arising of Tathāgatas or whether there is no such arising, this nature of things just stands, this causal status, this causal orderliness, the relatedness of this to that."

— K. S. II. 21.

longer hanker after more and more fuel. Although the standpoint of Buddhism is thus made clear, there is a general dislike for the metaphor of the fire for fear of arriving at the annihilationist view.<sup>1</sup> This fear, it must be said, is totally unfounded. On the other hand, there are some scholars who even, exploit this metaphor in order to posit an Absolute Cosmic principle or some noumenal essence from which beings come out and to which they finally return. Thus Keith presumes that the ancient Indian conception of fire admitted of such an underlying perduring essence.<sup>2</sup> Even if one is disinclined to state one's deep-seated soul prejudice in such bold terms, one is sometimes tempted to demur between the possibilities of a positive and a negative answer regarding the eternalist and nihilist points of view. The inquirer is sought to be kept in a permanent state of suspense as to the correct position. This reluctance to countenance the force of the fire metaphor is due largely to the promptings of the egoistic child in man, which loves to "eat the cake as well as have it." The Buddha's attitude, however, was quite different. Although he was not categorical as regards the four alternatives, he clarified the correct position by resorting to the law of Dependent Arising, which he illustrated with the fire-metaphor:

*Accī yathā vātavegena khitto - Upasīvā ti Bhagavā  
atthaṃ paleti na upeti saṃkham  
evaṃ muni nāmakāyā vimutto  
atthaṃ paleti na upeti saṃkham.*

<sup>1</sup> cf " . . . . The literal meaning of *Nirvāna* does not help us. It means 'blowing out' as of a lamp and the verb is used literally of the extinguishing of a light, but this is not a prominent notion in the treatment of the subject, and the meaning has been modified by its being connected with another verb, for the participle is formed from '*nir-vr*' or '*ni vr*' meaning tranquil, happy, ceased and '*parinirvrta*' in its technical sense is 'having attained *nirvāna*'. In any case it does not assert the annihilation of the individual."

— E. J. Thomas, '*The History of Buddhist Thought*,

- pp. 123 ff,

<sup>2</sup> Buddhist Philosophy, pp 65 f.

"Lo Upasīva," he replied,  
"As flame flung on by force of wind  
Flees to its end, reaches what none  
Can sum; the silent sage, released  
From name-and-from, goes to the goal,  
Reaches the state that none can sum."

*Atthaṃ gato so uda vā so natthi  
udāhu ve sassatiyā arogo  
tam me muni sādhu viyākarohi  
tathā hi te vidito esa dhammo.*

"And he who wins the goal, is he  
No more, or truly ever well?  
That to me, sage, in full explain,  
For thine's this Dharma, found and known."

*Atthaṃgatassa na pamānam atthi - Upasīvā ti Bhagavā  
yena naṃ vajju, taṃ tassa natthi  
sabbesu dhammesu samūhatesu  
samūhatā vādapathā pi sabbe,*

— Sn. 1074-76.

"Know, *Upasīva*," then he said,  
"There is no measuring of man,  
Won to the goal, whereby they'd say  
His measure is so: that's not for him;  
When all conditions are removed,  
All ways of telling are removed."<sup>1</sup>

— W. C. E. B., p. 155.

In the light of the foregoing discussion it would be no exaggeration to say that an evaluation of the significance of '*papañca*' and '*papañca- saññā -saṅkhā*' would greatly facilitate a deeper appreciation of some of the main teachings of Buddhism. It paves the way for a harmonious combination of psychology with ethics and of ethics with philosophy. It gives us the clue to the lotus-philosophy behind the life of the enigmatic sage. The early Buddhist attitude to the problems of language and logic as well as the relationship between theory and practice can also be determined thereby to a great extent. Thus we have here a new angle of study which has immense potentialities for illuminating many a dim-lit passage in the Pali Canon.

---

<sup>1</sup> By some strange irony, these very verses are quoted by some scholars in support of their notion that the *Tathāgata* does not cease to exist after death *though* he is impredicable. This assertion contradicts itself since even by asserting the *Tathāgata*'s existence in some form or other, they are already predicating him. Besides, this is precisely the position adopted by *Anurādha*, for which he was upbraided, first by the heretics and then by the Buddha himself. It must be noted that the questions of *Upasīva* in vs. 1075 are in essence identical with those raised by *Vaccha*. *Upasīva*, too, is here trying to locate the extinguished fire.

## II

### COMMENTARIAL INTERPRETATIONS OF PAPAÑCA AND PAPAÑCA-SAÑÑĀ -SAÑKHĀ

In our attempt to determine and evaluate the significance of 'papañca' and 'papañca-saññā-sañkhā', we have had occasion to make stray references to some alternative interpretations advanced by ancient and modern scholars. However, we have not attempted therein any detailed or comparative study of the various interpretations, as it might interfere with the coherence of the theme. Hence we shall now cite them, together with relevant comments where necessary, so that it will give the reader something to go by in case he finds our evaluation of the subject to be unacceptable.

The earliest commentarial definitions of the terms 'papañca' and 'papañca sañkhā' available to us are those in the Canonical Commentary *Mahā Niddesa*. There we read:

(I) *Papañcā yeva papañcasamkhā, taṇhā -papañcasamkhā, diṭṭhi-papañcasamkhā, māna-papañcasamkhā.*

— Nid. I. 280.

"*Papañcas* themselves are *papañcasamkhā*, to wit: *papañca-samkhās* of craving, views and conceit."

(II) *Papañcā yeva papañcasamkhā, taṇhā-papañcasamkhā diṅṅhipapañcasamkhā. Katamaṃ taṇhāpapañcassa mūlaṃ? Avijjā mūlaṃ, ayonisomanasikāro mūlaṃ, asmimāno mūlaṃ ahirikaṃ mūlaṃ anottappaṃ mūlaṃ uddhaccaṃ mūlaṃ. Katamaṃ diṭṭhipapañcassa mūlaṃ? Avijjā mūlaṃ uddhaccaṃ mūlaṃ'*  
— ibid. 344-5.

'*Papañcas* themselves are *papañcasamkhā*: *papañcasamkhā* of craving and of views. What is the root of craving-*papañca*? Ignorance is the root, wrong reflection is the root, the conceit 'I am' is the root, lack of shame is the root, lack of fear is the root, restlessness is the root. What is the root of views-*papañca*? Ignorance. . . restlessness is the root."

The two terms are here treated as synonyms. They are, however, not defined with reference to their etymology. Instead we find a definition in extension giving three instances of *papañca*. An attempt to probe into the roots of *papañca* is also evident but it is not sufficiently suggestive of any basic significance that can be attached to *papañca*.

In the *Nettipakarana* we come across a more pronounced attempt to unravel the meaning of the term.

(1) *Papañcā nāma taṇhādiṭṭhimānā tadabhisamkhatā ca sañkhārā.*

— Netti. 37.

"*Papañcas* are craving, views and conceit and whatever preparations are activated by them."

(II) *Yo cāpi papañco, ye ca sañkhārā yā ca atītānāgata-paccuppannassa abhinandanā, idaṃ ekattaṃ.*

— ibid. 38.

"Whatever is *papañca*, whatever are the preparations and whatever is the delighting in past, future and present — all these are the same."

(111) *Papañco nāma vuccati anubandho* - ibid. 38.

"*Papañca* is so called because it is a pursuit."

One seems to get a glimpse of the 'conceptual prolificity' implied by *papañca* in the above three definitions. Firstly, the fact that *papañca* is taken to mean not only craving, conceit and views, but also the preparations or mental synergies activated by them, is a notable advance. Secondly, there is the tendency to regard *papañca*, the preparations, and the delighting in past, present and future, as synonymous. This last mentioned type of delighting is strongly reminiscent of the *Madhupiṇḍika* formula of sense-perception and is also a tacit recognition of the same prolificity in thought. Thirdly, in calling *papañca* a 'pursuit', yet another hint has been given in the same direction.

According to the *Milindapañha*, King Milinda, too, was keen to get a clear solution to the problem that is engaging our attention now. To this end he questions Nagasena thus:-

*Bhante, Nāgasena, bhāsitaṃpetam bhagavatā 'nippapañcārāmā bhikkhave viharatha nippapañcaratino' ti. Katamaṃ taṃ nippapañcanti?*

"Venerable Sir Nāgasena, this has been said by the Exalted One: 'Monks, you should dwell delighting in and being delighted by *nippapañca*.' What, Sir, is that *nippapañca*?"

Nāgasena's reply, however, is imprecise and leaves much to be desired. He merely says:

*Sotāpatthiphalaṃ Mahārāja nippapañcam, sakadāgāmiṃphalaṃ nippapañcam, anāgāmiṃphalaṃ nippapañcam, arahattaphalaṃ nippapañcam.*

—Milp. 262.

"The Fruit of Stream-winning, O Great King, is *nippapañca*, the Fruit of Once-returning is *nippapañca*, the Fruit of Non-returning is *nippapañca*, the Fruit of Arahantship is *nippapañca*."

Thus the relevance of the *Milindapañha* to the present problem is only its awareness of the problem itself.

Coming down to Buddhaghosa, we find a number of instances where he has commented on *papañca* and *papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*. The following are some of them:

(I) '*Papañcasaññāsaṅkhā*' ti, tayo *papañcā taṇhāpapañco, mānapapañco diṭṭhipapañco*'ti. Tattha aṭṭhasatataṇhā-vicaritaṃ taṇhāpapañco nāma, navavidho māno mānapapañco nāma, dvāsaṭṭhiditṭhiyo diṭṭhipapañco nāma. Tesu idha taṇhāpapañco adhippeto. Kenatṭhena papañco? Mattapamattākārapāpanatṭhena.'

—D. A. II 721.

" '*Papañcasaññāsaṅkhā*' means the three *papañcas*—the *papañcas* of craving, conceit and views. Therein, the range of the hundred-and-eightfold craving is called '*taṇhā-papañca*'; the ninefold conceit is the '*māna-papañca*'; and the sixty-two views are called '*diṭṭhipapañca*'. Of them '*taṇhāpapañca*' is meant in this context. In which sense is it '*papañca*'? In the sense that it leads to intoxication and delay."

(II) '*Papañcasaññāsaṅkhā*'ti ettha *saṅkhā*'ti koṭṭhāsā: *papañcasaññā*'ti taṇhādiṭṭhipapañcasampayuttā saññā, saññānāmena vā *papañcā*yeva vuttā; tasmā *papañca-koṭṭhāsāti* ayamettha attho.

—M. A. II. 75.

"*Papañcasaññāsaṅkhā*: herein '*saṅkhā*' means 'parts' ; '*papañcasaññā*' means perceptions associated with *taṇhā*—and *diṭṭhi-papañca*; or else *papañcas* themselves are meant by the word '*saññā*'; hence '*parts-of-papañca*' is all that is meant here."

(III) '*Papañco*'ti ca mattapamattākārabhāvena pavattānaṃ taṇhādiṭṭhimānānaṃ etaṃ adhivacanaṃ.

—M. A. 10.

"*Papañca*: this is a synonym for craving, views and conceit which manifest themselves in the form of intoxication and dalliance."

(IV) '*Iñjitāniādīni*', yasmā imehi kilesehi sattā iñjanti ceva phandanti ca *papañcitā* ca honti pamattākārappattā.

—S. A. III. 73.

"*Iñjitāni* etc. since by these defilements beings are moved, they tremble and are subject to *papañca*, i.e. they become more or less indolent."

(V) '*Papañco*'ti taṇhādiṭṭhimānavasena pavatto madanākārasaññhito kilesapapañco.

—A. A. III. 348.

"*Papañca*: this is the *papañca* with defiling tendencies, which is of an inebriating character, manifesting itself in the form of craving, views and conceit."

Buddhaghosa has rightly recognised the triune nature of *papañca*, but the validity of his definition of *diṭṭhi* is rather doubtful for reasons we have stated earlier. The bringing together of '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saṅkhā*' as synonyms, and the rendering of the word '*saṅkhā*' by '*koṭṭhāsā*' present two other problems which we have already dealt with in fair detail. Apart from these, an important development is evident in the attempt to

define '*papañca*' with reference to '*pamatta*' (intoxication or delay) or any of its cognate senses. This particular semantic development seems to have quite an interesting history behind it. In discussing the primary etymological meaning of '*papañca*' we have observed that the sense of 'diffusion' when applied to the verbal realm conveys such senses as 'verbosity' or 'circumlocution.' These latter have the implicit notion of a delay in stating precisely the relevant fact. It is but a step from this 'delay in speech' to 'delay in action', and in popular usage '*papañca*' came to be indiscriminately used in both senses, as a result of analogy. The commentarial preference for the same indiscriminate usage need not be seriously called in question, if it does not interfere with the correct interpretation of suttas. But of this we have doubts, for with the identification of '*papañca*' with '*pamāda*'. much of the deeper psychological and philosophical significance of the former term tends to get obscured. We have already shown that the philosophical dimension which '*papañca*' assumed in its application to the mental realm was so deep that even the shortest 'code word' (e g. 'I'), which helps to avoid *verbal-papañca*, may turn out to be a mental-*papañca*. If such is the case in regard to the two contiguous realms of thought and speech, one can well imagine the polarity that exists between *papañca* in thought and *papañca* in action. The identification of the 'diffusion in thought' with the 'inertia in action' thus divests *papañca* of its deeper philosophical nuances. The peculiar psychological impetus behind this identification is most probably the attraction of the ethically significant term '*pamāda*'. This term was widely used in the qualified sense of 'laxity in the endeavour to attain *Nibbāna*'. The occurrences of the term '*papañca*', on the other hand were few and far between, but one feels that this very rarity should have forewarned the commentators. However, as it came to pass, '*pamāda*' triumphed - owing to the commentarial predilection for an ethical terminology — and carried away with it the subtler and deeper nuances so vital to the interpretation of the suttas.

The position is much the same, if not worse, in the case of Dhammapāla's commentaries. The word '*papañca*' is now recognised as a legitimate synonym for '*kilesā*' (taints) and it kindles the commentarial imagination in a much lighter vein:

(1) '*Papañcasāṅkhā pahānaṃ*'ti, *papañcenti* yattha *sayam* uppannā *taṃ santānaṃ vitthārenti*, *ciraṃ* ṭhapentī'ti *papañcā*; *kilesā*; *visesato rāga-dosa-moha diṭṭhi-mānā*. *Tathāhi vuttam* *rāgapapañco dosapapañco mohapapañco diṭṭhipapañco taṇhāpapañco mānapapañco*'ti. *Api ca saṅkilesaṭṭho papañcattho kacavaraṭṭho papañcattho*. *Tattha rāgapapañcassa subhasaññā nimittam*, *dosapapañcassa āghātavattthu*, *mohapapañcassa āsavā*, *taṇhāpapañcassa vedanā*, *diṭṭhipapañcassa saññā mānapapañcassa vitakko nimittam*. *Tehi papañcehi sahatatā saññā papañcasaññā*, *papañcasaññānaṃ saṅkhā bhāgā koṭṭhāsā papañcasaññāsāṅkhā*.

— Ud. A. 372

"*Papañcasāṅkhāpahāna*: *papañcas* are so called because they bring about delay, wherever one is born; they lengthen out one's continuum, make one linger long. They are the defilements, particularly lust, hatred, delusion, views and conceit. Hence it has been said: '*rāgapapañco dosapapañco mohapapañco diṭṭhipapañco mānapapañco*'. Moreover, '*papañca*' has the sense of defilement, of rubbish. Therein, the object of lust is the notion of pleasantness, that of hatred is the occasion for ill will, that of delusion are the cankers, that of craving is feeling, that of views are perceptions, that of conceit is ratiocination. That perception concomitant with those *papañcas* is '*papañcasaññā*'. The number, the divisions, the parts of those *papañcasaññā* are called '*papañcasaññāsāṅkhā*'.

(II) .... *sattasantānaṃ saṃsāre papañcenti vitthārentī*'ti. *papañcā*.

— Thag. A. II. 219.

" '*Papañcas*' are so called because they lengthen out the mind-continuum of beings in *Saṃsāra*. "

(III) '*...Papañcā nāma rāgādayo kilesā tesaṃ vūpasamatāya tadabhāvato ca lokuttarā dhammā nippapañcā nāma*.

— Thag. A. III. 70,

"*Papañcas* are the defilements such as lust. The transcendental states are called '*nippapañcā*', in the sense that they tend to allay those defilements and are devoid of the same."

A trace of the dynamic sense of '*papañca*' is seen to emerge in the word '*vitthārenti*' ('lengthen out') in Dhammapāla's definitions, but he gives it an ethical twist by connecting it with the idea of lingering long in *Ṣaṇ sāra*.

In view of the above developments in commentarial exegesis, it appears that a quest for the original significance of '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' should proceed primarily on the basis of contextual analysis of the suttas. Though the commentaries do throw some light on the subject, they are themselves in the grip of a good deal of semantic development. One has, therefore, to get the suttas to speak for themselves.

### III

#### PRAPAÑCA IN MAHĀYĀNA BUDDHISM

In Mahāyāna, the term '*prapañca*' preserved much of its deeper philosophical implications, and it had a significant role to play in the Mādhyamika dialectic as well as in the Idealism of the Vijñānavādins. Both systems launched a vigorous attack on all thought constructions and stressed the necessity of the utter allayment of *prapañca* (*prapañcōpasama*). For the Mādhyamika, the Absolute Truth was above all linguistic relations. Thus in the *Mādhyamika Kārikā*:

*Aparapratyayaṃ sāntaṃ - prapañcairaprapañcitaṃ  
nirvikalpaṃ anānārthaṃ - etat tatvasya lakṣaṇaṃ*

— XVIII. 9.

"Non-relative, quiescent, not to be grasped by concepts, free from thought constructions and plurality — this is the mark of truth."

*Prapañcayanti ye buddhaṃ - prapañcātītamavyayaṃ  
te prapañcahatāḥ sarve - na pasyanti tathāgataṃ.*

— XXXIII. 15.

"Those who conceptualise the Buddha, who has transcended the range of verbal elaboration and who decays not, none of them will see the Tathāgata, overcome as they are by concepts."

We have already discussed with special reference to the term '*Suññatā*', some of the limitations of the Mādhyamika dialectic. Their concept of the dialectical Middle Path, which even made them declare that their position is 'no-position', ultimately ran into difficulties due to lack of appreciation of the pragmatic approach. As to this latter approach, the Theravādins had it in good measure, even to the extent of ignoring the dialectical significance of the term '*papañca*'. Hence any rapprochement between the two systems on the question of *papañca* will be of mutual benefit, as both will have much to learn and unlearn by comparing notes.

The *Vijñānavādins*, who posited an *Ālaya Vijñāna* ('store-consciousness') which is intrinsically pure and non-dual, held that it is the thought constructions which obscure and defile its true nature. Hence they also regarded '*prapañca*' as a key-word in their philosophical system. Thus one reads in the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*:

*Jalpaprapañcābhiratā hi bālās –  
tatve na kurvanti matim visālām  
jalpo hi traidhātukaduhkhahetus  
tatvaṁ hi duhkhasya vināśahetuh'*

—L. S. (Nanjio) III. 73.

"Given to idle prattle through concepts are the fools, and they do not attain to the great wisdom pertaining to Truth. Such prattle, verily, is the origin of suffering in the three realms, and the Truth is the cause of destruction of that suffering."

*Evamanāgatodhunāpi dharmatayā nirvikalpāh tathāgatāh,  
sarvavikalpaprapañcātītāh.....*

—ibid. p. 19.

"Thus in the future as well as at present, the Tathāgatas are by nature devoid of thought constructions; they are beyond all thought constructions and verbal elaboration."

A reference to a mind intrinsically luminous but defiled by extraneous taints, occurs in the *Anguttara Nikāya* (1. 10). Similarly, the consciousness of the emancipated one is said to be free from conceptual taints. Yet in the Pali Canon there is no suggestion of an absolute mind as the Ultimate Reality as in the case of the *Vijñānavāda*. Even the *viññāna* finally ceases at the death of the emancipated one since it is just one of the five aggregates:

*Abhedī kāyo. nirodhi saññā, vedanā sītirahamsu sabbā,  
vūpasamimsu saṅkhārā, viññānaṁ attham agamā.*

—Ud. 93.

"The body broke up, perceptions ceased, all feelings cooled off, preparations calmed down and *consciousness came to an end.*"

Moreover, the reference to a mind intrinsically pure is not to be confused with the idea of an absolute entity, like a soul, already embedded in every being. The luminosity of the mind is a *potentiality* which becomes a reality only when the necessary conditions are fulfilled. These conditions are collectively called '*bhāvanā*', a word which even literally suggests growth. It is significant that the *Anguttara* passage referred to above is in point of fact an exhortation stressing the importance of *bhāvanā* (development of mind). Thus, according to the *Pali Nikāyas*, one has to *grow* into the luminosity of the mind. It is not something pre-existing in some metaphysical sense, ready to be peeled off by dialectical or other means. The lotus cannot be traced metaphysically to the seed or the plant. It has to blossom forth in order to be a lotus.

Yet another innovation of the *Vijñānavādins* was the thoroughgoing idealism established with the help of a hierarchy of eight *vijñānas*. Here again we have an extreme. Apart from the ideas of the conditionality of phenomena, of the limitations of the sensory apparatus and of language and logic, in early Buddhism one does not find evidence of a 'store-consciousness' projecting all material and mental phenomena.

The peculiar expressions '*papañca-saṅkhā*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', which we have come across in the Pali Canon, seem to be conspicuous by their absence in Mahāyāna texts. It may be that the term '*prapañca*' itself came to be looked upon as being capable of conveying all its verbal and nominal senses. However, in the Pali Canon we noted some basis for a distinction between '*papañca*' on the one hand and '*papañca-saṅkhā*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' on the other. While '*papañca*' in a dynamic sense was used to denote the triple proliferating tendency of the mind, '*papañca-saṅkhā*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' signified the apparently static concepts tinged with or characterised by that particular tendency. As such, in the case of '*papañca*' the accent was more on the deep-seated psychological tendency centering on the ego-notion, rather than on its external counterpart, the concept or linguistic convention. By eradicating *papañca* at its very source, the sage puts an end to



*papañca-saṅkhā* or *papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*, but he is at liberty to use worldly concepts (*lokasamaññā*, *lokaniruttiyo*, *lokavohārā*, *lokapaññattiyo*) without any fear of being overwhelmed by them. Hence, the true struggle was fought within, rather than in debate. It is doubtful whether all the good sense behind this peculiar usage of terms could be sufficiently conveyed by the single term '*prapañca*'.

#### IV PRAPAÑCA IN THE VEDĀNTA

The exact chronological relation that obtains between the concept of *papañca* in the Pali Nikāyas and that of *prapañca* in the Vedānta, is a matter for speculation. This is because of the fact that this concept is unknown to the major *Upaniṣads* such as the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka* and the *Chāndogya*, which are generally recognised as pre-Buddhistic. It finds mention in such later *Upaniṣads* as the *Māṇḍūkya* and the *Svetāsvatara*. In fact, the passage in the *Māṇḍūkya* which contains a reference to '*prapañca*' is a conscious elaboration of doctrines already adumbrated in the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*. Though as such the chronological relation is not sufficiently clear, there are some traces of parallelism between the Vedantic and the early Buddhist conceptions of *prapañca*.

The *Māṇḍūkya Upaniṣad*,<sup>1</sup> devoted solely to the discussion of the mystic significance of the syllable '*Om*', describes in detail the four 'fourths' of the self. The first three states of the self are the 'waking state' (*jāgaritasthāna*), the 'dreaming-state' (*svapnasthāna*), and the 'deep-sleep state' (*susuptasthāna*), corresponding to the three phonetic elements (*mātrā*), 'a', 'u' and 'm', which make up the syllable '*Om*'. The fourth state of the self is without an element, and it is said that with it there can be no dealing (*avyavahāryah*), that it is the cessation of development (*prapañcopasamah*), benign (*sivah*) and without a second (*advaitah*). Thus the first three states are collectively regarded as *prapañca*. These three are defined firstly with reference to the 'fourths'.

*'Jāgaritasthāno bahisprajñah saptāṅga ekonaviṃsati mukhah  
sthūlabhugvaisvānarah prathamah pādah'. — III*

"The first quarter is *Vaisvānara*, whose sphere of activity is the waking state, who is conscious of external objects, who has

---

<sup>1</sup>Tr. - *Swāmi Nikhilānanda*.

seven limbs and nineteen mouths and whose experience consists of gross material objects."

*'Svapnasthāno' ntaḥprajñāḥ saptāṅgāḥ ekonaviṃsatimukhāḥ praviviktabhuktaijaso dviṭīyah pādah.*

—IV

"The second quarter is the *Taijasa*, whose sphere (of activity) is the dream, who is conscious of internal objects, who has seven limbs and nineteen mouths and who experiences the subtle objects."

*'Yatra supto na kaṃcana kāmāṃ kāmāyate, na kaṃcana svapnam pasyati tatsusuptāṃ, susuptasthāna ekībhūtaḥ prajñā-naghana evā 'nandamayo hyānandabhuk cetomukham prajñā-strīyah pādah.*

—V

"That is the deep sleep state wherein the sleeper does not desire any objects nor does he see any dream. The third quarter is the *Prājñā*, whose sphere is deep sleep, in whom all (experiences) become unified or undifferentiated, who is verily a mass of consciousness entire, who is full of bliss and who experiences bliss, and who is the path leading to the knowledge (of the two other states)."

The same three states are now defined with reference to the three phonetic elements:

*'Jāgaritasthāno vaisvānaro 'kārah prathamā mātrā' āpterā-dimatvādāpnoti ha vai sarvāṅkāmānādisca bhavati ya evaṃ veda.*

—IX

"He who is *Vaisvānara*, having for its sphere of activity the waking state, is 'A', the first letter (of Aum) on account of its all pervasiveness or on account of being the first (these being the common feature of both). One who knows this attains to the fulfilment of all desires and becomes the first (of all)."

*'Svapnasthānastaijasa ukāro dviṭīyā mātrokarṣādubhayatvā-dvotkarṣati ha vai jñānasamṭati samānasca bhavati nāsyābrahma-vitkule bhavati ya evaṃ veda.'*

"*Taijasa*, whose sphere of activity is the dream state, is 'U', the second letter (of Aum) on account of superiority or on account of

being in between the two. He who knows this attains to a superior knowledge, is treated equally by all alike and finds no one in his line who is not a knower of Brahman."

*Susuptasthānah prājñō makārastrīyā mātrā miterapīter vā minoti ha vā idaṃ sarvamapītisca bhavati ya evaṃ veda.*

—XI

"*Prājñā*, whose sphere is deep sleep, is 'M', the third letter of Aum, because it is both the measure and that wherein all become one. One who knows this (identity of *Prājñā* and M) is able to measure all (realise the real nature of the world) and also comprehends all within himself."

The phonetic symbolism of the first three states seems to strike a familiar note. The letter 'a' representing the waking-state is associated with the attainment (*apti*) of all desires and becoming first of all (*ādimatva*). This reminds us of the *taṇhā* aspect of *papañca* in early Buddhism.

The sleeping-state, with which the letter 'u' is identified, is connected with superiority or exaltation (*utkarṣa*) and intermediateness (*ubhayatva*). He who knows this is said to be capable of attaining to a superior knowledge and of becoming equal (*samāna*). This state seems to have some relation to the *māna* aspect of *papañca*.

The deep sleep state symbolised by 'm' is associated with the idea of measuring or erecting the world (*miti*) and immersing in it (*apīti*). This smacks of the *diṭṭhi* aspect of *papañca*.

It must be admitted that this interpretation is highly conjectural and that the three states are explained differently in the orthodox Vedāntic circles. Nevertheless, it appears that the parallelism is too marked to be ignored. The definition of the fourth state, however, has already attracted the attention of Dr. Sarathchandra, because of its similarity to vs. 874 of the *Sutta Nipāta*. He quotes it without much comment in his discussion of the problem of *papañca*.<sup>1</sup> We may now compare the relevant *Upaniṣadic* passage and the verse in question in some detail.

*Nāntahprajñāṃ na bahisprajñāṃ nobhayatahprajñāṃ na prajñāṃ nāprajñāṃ. Aḍṣtamavyavahāryamalakṣaṇama-*

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhist Psychology of Perception*, p. 9, n. 19.

*cintyamavyapadesyamekāmmapratyayasāram prapañcopasamaṃ  
sāntaṃ sivam-advaitaṃ caturthaṃ manyate sa ātmā sa vijñeyah.*

— VII

"*Turīya* is not that which is conscious of the internal (subjective) world, nor that which is conscious of the external (objective) world, nor that which is conscious of both, nor that which is a mass of all sentiency, nor that which is simple consciousness, nor that which is insentient. (It is) unseen (by any sense organ), not related to anything, incomprehensible (by the mind), uninferable, unthinkable, indescribable, essentially of the nature of consciousness constituting the self alone, negation of all phenomena, the Peaceful, all Bliss and the non-dual. This is what is known as the fourth (*Turīya*). This is the *Ātman* and it has to be realised."

*na saññasaññī na visaññasaññī  
no pi asaññī na vibhūtasaññī  
evaṃ sametassa vibhoti rūpaṃ  
saññānidānā hi papañcasamkhā.*

— Sn. 874.

"Neither a person with normal consciousness nor one who has an abnormal consciousness, nor one who is in a non-conscious state, nor one who has put an end to consciousness - 'form' ceases to function for one who is thus constituted; for concepts characterised by prolificity have perception as their source."

From a study of the context in which the above verse of the *Kalahavivāda Sutta* is found, it would seem that the verse gives the final solution to the problem posed in the first verse of that sutta: "Whence do spring up contentions and disputes, lamentation and sorrow together with envy; and arrogance and conceit together with slander; whence do these spring up? Pray tell me this" (Sn. 862). The ultimate source of this outer and inner conflict is gradually laid bare as the sutta unfolds itself in the form of a dialogue. The links in this causal-chain are the following:

- I. *Kalahā-vivādā* (contentions and disputes), *paridevasoka* (lamentation and sorrow), *macchara* (envy), *mānātimāna* (arrogance and conceit), *pesuṇa* (slander).
- II. *Piyā* (things considered dear), *āsā-niṭṭhā* (expectations and fulfilments).
- III. *Chanda* (desire), *vinicchayā* (judgements), *kodha* (anger), *mosavajja* (falsehood), *kathamkathā* (doubt).
- IV. *Sātaraṃ-asātaṃ* (pleasant and unpleasant), *vibhava-bhava* (non-existence and existence).
- V. *Phassa* (Sense-impression), *pariggahā* (graspings), *mamatta* (egotism).
- VI. *Nāma-rūpa* (name-and-form), *icchā* (wish), *sukha-dukkha* (ease and discomfort).<sup>1</sup>

Although the verse in question purports to give the final solution to the initial problem stated in vs. 892, it is — more specifically—the reply to the following question in vs 873: "To him who is endowed in which manner does 'form' (*rūpa*) cease to function (*vibhoti*), as well as the notions of ease and discomfort? Tell me how this ceases to function. 'Let us know it' — such was my desire."

Now, the state in which 'form' ceases to function is presented in vs. 874 as a bewildering paradox. While in it, one is neither in his normal consciousness nor is he unconscious. He is not non-conscious nor has he put an end to consciousness. This cryptic formulation takes us back to the subject of *Aññā-phala samādhi* discussed earlier in this work. Since the *anidassanaviññāṇa* of the arahant does not 'illustrate' name-and-form, the concept of 'form' can no longer function and therewith sense impressions

<sup>1</sup> The chain of causes is rather ramified. Main links are therefore underlined.

too cease.<sup>1</sup> How this *anidassana-viññāṇa* serves as a refuge or an island for the arahant, amidst the gushing current of sense impressions, has already been discussed. Only the dictum in the last line of the verse (*saññānidānā hi papañcasāṅkhā*—"for concepts characterised by prolificity have perception as their source") needs special mention as it epitomizes the whole problem.

<sup>1</sup> According to the commentaries (*Mahā Niddesa* and *Paramatthajotikā*), vs. 874 contains an allusion to "one who is *on the path* to the formless realms" (*arūpamaggasamaṅgi* - Nid. I. 280). In explaining the four negatives in the verse, the *Niddesa* has already disallowed any possibility that the allusion is to the attainment of the formless absorptions ('. . . *vibhūtasaññino vuccanti catunnaṃ arūpasamāpattīnaṃ lābhino; na pi so catunnaṃ arūpasamāpattīnaṃ lābhī*'). The possibility that this could be a reference to the *Nirodha Samāpatti* (attainment of cessation) is also rejected in its comment on the words '*no pi asaṅñī*'. Hence the only way out of the *impasse*, was seen to lie in the identification of the cryptic formula with some vague *intermediate* state of 'directing the mind towards' (*cittaṃ abhinīharati abhininnāmeti*) some formless attainment. The assumption that the verse alludes, at least tacitly, to some formless (*arūpa*) attainment, is probably due to a wrong emphasis on the words '*vibhoti rūpaṃ*' (cf. Sn. vv. 1113, 1121). As the *Niddesa* itself mentions (p. 277), the transcending of form in the formless realm is but one of four possible forms of transcending. It is, therefore, very likely that the transcendence meant in the present context is the more radical one pertaining to the Arahant's *Aññā - phalasaṃādhi*. The following are some more clues for unravelling further evidence on this point.

I. *Yattha nāmañca rūpañca-asesaṃ. uparujjhati  
paṅghaṃ rūpasāññā ca - ettha sā chijjate jatā*

— S. N. 1. 13.

"Wherein name-and-form; sense-reaction and the *concept of form* are totally cut off, there it is that the tangle is snapped off."

In the next verse, the interlocutor confesses that his questions have been answered, but he proceeds to get the solution to yet another problem:

*Yan taṃ apucchimha akittayī no  
aññaṃ taṃ pucchāma tad imgha brūhi  
ettāvattaḅgaṃ nu vadanti h'eke  
yakkhassa<sup>1</sup> suddhiṃ idha paṇḍitāse  
udāhu aññaṃpi vadanti etto.*

— Sn. 875.

"Whatever we have asked you, you have explained it to us. We wish to ask you yet another; verily answer us that. Do some who are reckoned as wise men here declare the highest purity of the soul with this alone, or else do they state anything beyond this?"

Here the intention is probably to ascertain whether that particular state referred to in the previous verse is the highest purity of the individual soul. The interlocutor, although he grants that his problem of 'universal conflict' has now been solved, is apparently not satisfied until he gets it restated in terms of the soul theory.<sup>2</sup> In the last two verses of the sutta that follow, it is shown that his standpoint is at fault.

II. *Yassa vitakkā vidhūpitā - ajjhataṃ suvikappitā asesā  
taṃ saṅgaṃ aticca arūpasāññī - catuyogātigo na jātim eti.*  
- Ud. 71.

"In whom the thoughts fabricated within have been totally burnt out, having surpassed that bond, he is one who is *not conscious of form* (sic! *not*, as usual, 'conscious-of-the-formless', i.e. '*a-rūpa-saññī*'; not '*arūpa-saññī*'). He has transcended the four yokes and does not come back to birth."

<sup>1</sup> "Exceptionally the term '*yakkha*' is used as a *philosophical* term denoting the 'individual soul'." - P. T. S. Dict. '*Yakkha*' 7.

<sup>2</sup> A similar situation arises in the *Poṭṭhapāda Sutta* (D. N. I. 185 ff.) when Poṭṭhapāda tries to understand the Buddha's discourse on the cessation of perceptions in terms of a soul. His attempt met with a mild rebuff from the Buddha, but he gets a more trenchant one from Buddhaghosa in the form of the simile of the pig. (D. A.) (See also fn. 1. p. 115)

*Ettāvataggampi vadanti h'eke  
yakkhassa suddhiṃ idha paṇṇitāse  
tesaṃ puneke samayaṃ vadanti  
anupādisese kusalā vadānā*

— Sn. 866.

"Some who are considered wise men (*paṇṇitāse*) here call this itself the highest purity of the individual soul, but there are again some of them who, claiming to be experts in the cessation without substrata, speak of an annihilation."

*Ete ca ñatvā upanissitāti  
ñatvā munī nissaye so vimaṇ sī  
ñatvā vimutto na vivādameti  
bhavābhavāya na sameti dhīro.*

— Sn. 877.

"Knowing that they are dependent on speculative views, the sage who has discriminative knowledge of those views, being completely emancipated through knowledge, does not enter into dispute. The truly wise man (*dhīro*) does not fall back on any type of existence."

While some 'wise men' identify the afore-mentioned paradoxical state as the highest purity of the soul, yet others of the same category speak of it in terms of annihilation. Both these viewpoints are the outcome of speculative views based on the illusion of the ego. Hence the sage, well knowing their futility, does not posit any form of existence, since he has realised the cessation of all existence — the *Nibbāna* (*bhavanirodho nibbānaṃ*).

The term 'wise men' (*paṇṇitā*) seems to have been used here in an ironical sense, judging by the tone of the vs. 876. These two schools of 'wise men' who were disputing over the two sides of the same shield — the ego — were in eternal conflict between the two alternatives, 'to be or not to be'. Now, out of these two, the former had its strongest representative in the *Upanisadic* tradition. We have tried to show that there are traces of a parallelism between the phonetic symbolism of the first three states of the self in the *Māṇḍūkya* and the definition of *papañca* in Buddhism. If this is plausible, it may further be conjectured that in the fourth-state' (*Turīya*) — which not only

partakes of a paradoxical character like the *Aññā-phala*, but also has a specific reference to the allayment of *papañca* (*prapañcopasama*) — we have another version of the Buddha's teaching on *papañca*. It is clear from the *Māṇḍūkya* passage that the term '*prapañcopasama*' has been deployed to qualify the fourth state of *the self* which is said to be non-dual. Thus the ontological presuppositions concerning the reality of a self are reasserted here with the help of the above term. This could well be an attempt to graft the Buddhist teachings on *papañca* into the *Upanisadic* system, preserving intact, at the same time, the iron-framework of the soul theory.<sup>1</sup> This reminds us of the first school of 'wise men' referred to in vs. 875, for whom the paradoxical *Aññāphala samādhi* was 'the highest purity of *the self*'.

The *Svetāsvatara Upanisad*<sup>2</sup> uses the term '*prapañca*' to denote the phenomenal world of manifoldness, and it looks upon the world as an emanation from the One God, Creator.

*Sa vrkṣakā lākrtibhiḥ paronyo  
– yasmāt prapañcaḥ parivartate 'yam  
dharmāvahaṃ pāpanudaṃ bhagesaṃ  
– ñatvātmasthaṃ amṛtaṃ visvadhāma.*

— VI. 6.

"Higher and other than the world-tree, time and forms,  
Is He from whom this expanse proceeds,  
The bringer of right, the remover of evil, the lord of prosperity,  
Know Him as in one's own self the immortal abode of all."

*Yastantunābha iva tantubhiḥ pradhānajaiḥ  
svabhāvataḥ deva ekah svamāvṛṇoti sa no dadhād  
brahmāpyayam. — VI. 10*

<sup>1</sup> *Sarvaṃ hyetadbrahmāyamātmā brahma so yamātmā catuspāt.* - (Māṇḍ II  
"All this is verily Brahman. This *ātman* is Brahman. This *ātman* has four quarters

<sup>2</sup> Tr. by R. E. Hume.

"The One God who according to his own nature, covers himself like a spider with threads produced from unmanifested matter, may He grant us entrance into Brahman"

*Eko vasī niṣkriyānām bahūnām  
ekam bījam bahudhā yah karoti  
tamātmastham ye'nupasyanti dhīrās  
- teṣām sukham sāsvataṁ netareṣām*

— VI 12.

"The one controller of the inactive many who makes the *One* seed *manifold*."

The wise who perceive Him as standing in one's self—  
They and no others have eternal happiness."

The sense of manifoldness conveyed by '*prapañca*' here has more than an epistemological significance. It presupposes a creator who brings into existence this world of manifoldness out of his 'unmanifested matter' (*pradhāna*), even as the spider covers itself with threads produced out of its own organic matter. The process of creation is thus conceived as a real emanation from God, who is the One Controller behind the world of multiplicity. The one seed he makes manifold.

It must be said that this pantheistic conception of *prapañca* has nothing corresponding to it in the Pali Canon. There, as we saw, the manifoldness of the world does not presuppose a One which is real as the source of emanation. If anything, it is the *illusion* of the ego comprising the three dynamic multipliers, that works in collaboration with the imperfect sense-faculties to give us the impression of a real world of multiplicity. The sum total of this activity is made available to us through concepts—hence the terms '*papañcasāṅkhā*' and '*papañca-saññā saṅkhā*'. However, when seen in the light of *paññā*, the world is neither a Unity (*ekatta*) nor a Plurality (*nānatta*). All these conceptual distinctions disappear with the cessation of *papañca*.

## MODERN SCHOLARS ON PAPAÑCA AND PAPAÑCA – SAÑÑĀ - SAṅKHĀ

There is hardly any consensus of opinion among modern scholars as to the correct rendering and the exact significance of '*papañca*' and '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', as they occur in the Pāli Canon. Thus the P. T. S. Dictionary begins its comment on '*papañca*' with an air of uncertainty:

"In its Pali meaning, uncertain whether identical with Sanskrit *prapañca* (*pra* + *pañc* - to spread out; meaning 'expansion, diffuseness, manifoldness'); more likely, as suggested by etymology and meaning of Lat. 'im-ped-iment-um,' connected with *pada*, thus perhaps originally 'pa-pad-ya', i. e. what is in front of (i. e. in the way of) the feet (as an obstacle):

1. obstacle, impediment, a burden which causes delay, hindrance, delay, ...
2. illusion, obsession, hindrance to spiritual progress...
3. diffuseness, copiousness.

*papañca-saṅkhā* - sign or characteristic of obsession.  
*papañca-saññā (saṅkhā)* - idea of obsession, *idee-fixe*, illusion."

It must have been the difficulty to relate the meaning of Skt. '*prapañca*' with the exegesis found in the Pali commentaries, that prompted the lexicographers to suggest a new etymology '*pa-pad-ya*'. But this suggested etymology seems to be a little far-fetched. If its purpose is merely to explain away such accepted meanings as 'obstacle, impediment, delay or hindrance', then it is not even necessary, for as we have pointed out these are the secondary meanings of '*papañca* in speech', which assume a primary significance in the case of '*papañca* in action'. We have already shown how the commentators, due to their predilection for the ethically significant word '*pamāda*', analogically appropriated '*papañca*' also into the realm of action. The Dictionary explains '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' as the sign or characteristic of

obsession. The connection between '*saṅkhā*' and concepts appears to have been overlooked.

In the *Buddhist Dictionary*, Ven. Nyanātiloka Mahāthera suggests the following meanings for '*papañca*': 'Expansion, diffuseness, detailed exposition, development, manifoldness, multiplicity (world), differentiation, appendant.' He further draws attention to the *Madhupiṇḍika* formula of sense perception, a portion of which he quotes and translates:

"... ... '*yaṇ vitakketi taṇ papañceti, yaṇ papañceti tatonidānam purisaṇ papañcasaññāsaṅkhā samudācaranti*', which I venture to translate thus: 'whatever he differentiates, by reason thereof, ideas and considerations of differentiation (*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*) arise in him'."

It may be said that in rendering '*papañca*' by 'differentiation,' the proliferating tendency of concepts has been suggested. The meaning of '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' as given here is also nearer the one we have suggested, though the verb '*samudācaranti*' is here taken in the sense of an 'arising' whereas we rendered it so as to mean an 'overwhelming'.

K. E. Neumann in his German translations, renders '*papañca*' with either *Vielheit* (plurality) or *Sonderheit* (diversity). This rendering has the disadvantage of being associated with its logical and ontological postulate of a Unity or Oneness. It may harmonise with the Vedāntic thought but not with early Buddhism.

T. W. and Mrs. Rhys Davids, in their translation of the *Dīgha Nikāya* (*Dialogues of the Buddha*, II, S. B. B III p. 312 fn) suggest '*idee-fixe*' as an equivalent for '*papañca-saññā*.' They stress the ethical connotations attached to the term by Buddhaghosa who explained it with the phrase '*mattapamattākārapāpana*.' The translators add the following comment also regarding the importance of the term.

"This is one of the most recurrent conceptions of the higher Buddhism, the system of the Aryan Path, and is one of the many ways in which the early Buddhists struggled to give more precise and ethical an implication to the Indian conception of *Avijjā*. It is also one of the technical terms most frequently misunderstood ..."

Mrs. Rhys Davids uses the word 'obsession' in her *Psalms of the Early Buddhists* (p. 343) as the equivalent for what she calls 'the difficult word, '*papañca*'. She contends Dr. Neumann's rendering on the grounds that the opposite of *ekatta* (oneness) is *nānatta* (plurality) and not *papañca*. This can be taken as a useful hint in the search for the original meaning of *papañca*.

Miss I. B. Horner takes '*papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*' in the sense of 'a number of obsessions and perceptions'. The validity of this bifurcation of '*papañca-saññā*' is rather doubtful. It is interesting to note how she has chosen the word 'number' as an equivalent for '*saṅkhā*,' bypassing its alternative meaning 'concept,' which we preferred.

Venerable Nānamoli Thera has the following comment to make on '*papañca*' in *The Path of Purification* (p. 578, fn. 17; see also, *The Guide*, p. 60, fn. 203-2):

"...The sense in which the word is used in the suttas is that of diversifying and is best exemplified at M. I, 111: 'Friends, due to eye and to a visible object eye consciousness arises. The coincidence of the three is contact. With contact as condition there is feeling. What a man feels that he perceives. What he perceives, he thinks about. What he thinks about, he diversifies (*papañceti*). Owing to his having diversified, the evaluation of diversifying perceptions besets a man with respect to past, future and present visible objects' and so on. This kind of '*papañca*' is explained by the commentaries as 'due to craving, pride, and views' (M. A. I. 25, II. 10; 75 etc.), and it may be taken as the diversifying action, the choosing and rejecting, the approval and disapproval (M. I. 65) exercised by craving etc. on the bare material supplied by perception and thought ..."

Here the true significance of the *Madhupiṇḍika* formula emerges to a great extent. The element of diversification no doubt contributes to the conceptual prolificity that is *papañca*. '*Papañca-saññā-saṅkhā*', for which he suggests the expression 'the evaluation of diversifying perceptions', takes the plural number in this context, and hence it would be more appropriate to take '*saṅkhā*' to mean 'reckonings' or 'concepts'.

E. M. Hare, while translating the *Anguttara Nikāya* (*Gradual*

*Sayings* IV. 155 fn. 4), observes: "*Papañca* is literally diffuseness, illusion, perhaps mystery-mongering." In that particular context he renders '*papañca*' by 'diffuseness' and '*nippapañca*' by 'exactness' or 'precision.' But he is probably referring to the verbal realm rather than to the mental. However, in translating the *Sutta Nipāta*, Hare has preferred the word 'hindrance' (*Woven Cadences of Early Buddhists*, pp. 2, 129). He has rendered the phrase '*saññānidānā hi papañcasañkhā*' which occurs in the *Kalahavivāda Sutta*, as follows: "Reckoned a hindrance is the perception's source" (p. 129). The phrase has been construed here in reverse order, giving prominence to the words '*saññānidāna*.' Nevertheless, it appears that he has caught a glimpse of the meaning of '*sañkhā*' as a 'reckoning' or a 'calling.'

G. C. Pande, in his *Studies in the Origins of Buddhism* (pp. 474 fn), draws attention to the connection of '*papañca*' with its counterpart in Buddhist Sanskrit and Vedāntic sources. Having taken account of such references as '*sabbaṅ accagamā imaṃ papañcaṃ*' (Sn. 8) and '*anuvicca papañcanāmarūpaṃ*' (Sn. 530), he arrives at the following conclusion: "*Papañca* is thus equivalent to *nāmarūpa*, to end which is to reach the highest attainment."

We have seen how the above two references, as well as many others in the Pali Canon, lend themselves to a better interpretation when *papañca* is given a more dynamic content such as 'prolific conceptualisation'. To equate it to '*nāmarūpa*', on the strength of its implications in other systems of thought, would be to obscure an important segment of the philosophy of early Buddhism.

E. R. Sarathchandra, in his search for the original meaning of '*papañca*', (*Buddhist Psychology of Perception*, pp. 4 ff), is guided to some extent by the significance of the term in the Vedānta and he also interprets '*papañca*' in terms of *nāmarūpa*.' He has tried to establish this meaning not withstanding the tautology that results from its application to the verse beginning with '*anuvicca papañca-nāmarūpaṃ*'. However, he has discussed at some length the relevance of '*papañca*' to the process of sense-perception and its essentially philosophical import. The fact that the identification of oneself with the thinking consciousness gives rise to *papañca-sañkhā* has been recognised. Yet he

renders '*papañca sañkhā*' as 'the obsession (*sañkhā*) known as *papañca*.' He seems to have had in mind some hybrid form between '*sañkā*' (*Skt shañkā*) and '*kañkhā*' (*Skt. kāñkshā*) — both meaning 'uncertainty' or 'doubt' — when he inadvertently took '*sañkhā*' to mean 'obsession'.

These are but a handful of the numerous interpretations advanced by modern scholars. We have neither the intention nor the capacity to be exhaustive in this connection. Yet this cross-section of conflicting views would suffice to prove that there is a shroud of uncertainty over the significance of '*papañca*' and '*papañca saññā-sañkhā*'. Hence it is hoped that our attempt will stimulate a deeper and more comprehensive study of the subject than what we have been able to present through these pages.



**I N D E X**  
**OF PALI AND SANSKRIT WORDS**  
(The indexes cover foot-notes as well.)

*akṣara*, 6.  
*aññāpaṭivedha*, 64.  
*aññāphala*, 55, 69, 70, 132, 133, 135, 136.  
*atammayo*, 31, 32.  
*attakilamathānuyoga*, 79.  
*attā*, 41, 72, 82, 97, 101.  
*atyanta-sūnyatā*, 92.  
*advaita*, 128, 131.  
*adhivacana*, 75, 77, 93.  
*anattā*, 33, 54, 85, 98, 100, 105, 112.  
*anantaṃ*, 64, 67.  
*anāgāmin*, 72.  
*anārammaṇaṃ*, 68, 70.  
*anicca*, 33, 85, 105.  
*anidassana*, 61-63, 66, 67, 78, 79, 132, 133.  
*animitta*, 56, 89.  
*anupādā-parinibbāna*, 73.  
*anupādisesanibbānadhātu*, 59.  
*anupubbasiṅkhā*, 81.  
*anusaya*, 9, 21, 41, 78, 82.  
*anejo*, 107.  
*apuññābhisaṅkhāra*, 79.  
*appaṇihita*, 70.  
*appatittāṃ*, 68, 70.  
*appapañcaṃ*, 1, 19, 20.  
*appavattāṃ*, 68, 72.  
*aprapañcya*, 20.  
*amata*, 68.  
*araṇapaṭipadā*, 47

*arahattaphalasamādhī*, 55.  
*ariyasāvaka*, 17, 18.  
*arūpa*, 59, 64, 71, 79, 133, 134.  
*avijjā*, 75, 76, 78, 117, 139.  
*avitakka-avicāra*, 25.  
*avitakkajhāyī*, 58.  
*avitakkasamādhī*, 58.  
*avyākata*, 16, 17, 18, 103, 107.  
*asaṅkhata*, 68.  
*asura*, 14, 23.  
*asmimāna*, 11, 117.  
*ākāsānañcāyatana*, 48, 56, 67, 88.  
*ākiñcaññāyatana*, 88.  
*ātman*, 53, 99, 131, 136.  
*ānantarika*, 55.  
*āneñjābhisaṅkhāra*, 79.  
*āyatana*, 67, 69.  
*ārammaṇa*, 58, 64, 87.  
*ālaya vijñāna*, 125.  
*āloka*, 58.  
*āsava*, 78, 122.  
*upādāna*, 18, 19, 82, 110.  
*uppāda*, 83, 85, 113.  
*ekatta*, 48, 87, 137, 140.  
*kāmaloka*, 64, 79.  
*kāmasukhaIlikānuyoga*, 79.  
*kāyasaṅkhāra*, 79.  
*kilesa*, 121, 122.  
*khīṇabīja*, 79.  
*citta*, 55, 62, 79.  
*cutūpapāta*, 86, 87.

*chandas*, 44, 45.  
*chinnapapañca*, 1, 36.  
*jāgaritasthāna*, 128, 129.  
*jāti*, 8, 31, 74, 87, 113.  
*jhāna*, 55, 58, 72, 79.  
*taijasa*, 129.  
*takkapariyāhata*, 7.  
*taṇhā*, 8, 10-12, 19, 23, 32, 37-38, 50, 52, 64, 90, 117-120, 130.  
*tathāgata*, 18, 19, 41, 48, 49, 50, 51, 58, 84, 108-112, 113, 115, 124, 125.  
*tammaya*, 30, 32.  
*tādiso*, 31.  
*tādi*, 31, 33, 35.  
*turīya*, 131, 135.  
*darathā*, 88, 93, 106.  
*diṭṭhi*, 7, 11, 17-19, 23, 36-42, 47, 50-52, 75, 90, 96, 101, 117-122, 130.  
*diṭṭhijāla*, 7.  
*dukkha*, 8, 33, 59, 68, 73, 74, 81, 86, 87, 96, 98, 105, 111, 112, 132.  
*deva*, 14, 35, 55, 76.  
*dosa*, 33, 120, 122.  
*dhamma*, 3, 9, 31, 37, 38, 39, 54, 94, 115.  
*dharmanairātmya*, 100.  
*nandi*, 72.  
*nānatta*, 137, 140.  
*nāma*, 5, 64, 67, 74, 77.  
*nāmarūpa*, 32-35, 61, 65, 66, 72-75, 132-141.  
*nidassana*, 62.  
*nippapañca*, 1, 2, 23, 36, 43, 55, 107, 119, 122, 141.

*nibbāna*, 17, 23, 32, 40 - 42, 48, 49, 53, 56, 58, 59, 60, 66-69, 71, 72, 86, 97, 102-104, 106, 111, 113, 121, 135.  
*nibbidā*, 85.  
*nibbedhikāpaññā*, 64.  
*nirutti*, 43, 45, 74, 84, 93.  
*nirodha*, 16-18, 19, 25, 38, 57, 59, 66, 70, 71, 74, 82, 84, 87, 88, 112, 125.  
*nirvāna*, 114.  
*nissaraṇa*, 68, 71, 85.  
*nevasaññānāsaññāyatana*, 14, 48, 56, 67, 85, 88.  
*nairātmya*, 100  
*paññatti*, 24, 75, 77, 84, 93.  
*paññā*, 26, 33, 54, 58, 60, 70, 75, 78, 137.  
*paṭigha*, 77, 133.  
*paṭicca-samuppāda*, 5, 8, 71, 73, 85, 113.  
*papañca*, 1, 16, 17-24, 27, 28, 30, 33-36, 44, 47, 50-52, 58, 79, 107, 110, 122, 124, 126, 127, 130, 136, 137-142.  
*papañcanirodha*, 1, 20, 36, 55.  
*papañcavūpasama*, 1, 20, 36, 55, 85.  
*papañcasanikhā*, 1, 3, 12, 24, 32, 36, 51, 117, 120, 122, 127, 131, 133, 137, 138, 141.  
*papañcasaññā*, 1, 21, 120, 122, 138, 140  
*papañcasaññāsanikhā*, 1, 3-9, 12, 21, 23, 24, 28, 32, 116, 117, 119, 120, 123, 127, 137-140, 142.  
*papañcita*, 1, 16, 18, 19, 33, 108.  
*papañceti*, 1, 3, 5, 7, 19, 139, 140.

*pabhā*, 60, 66-67.  
*pamatta*, 120, 121, 139.  
*pamāda*, 121, 138.  
*paramattha*, 42, 43.  
*paramatthasuñña*. 102.  
*parinibbāna*, 73, 102.  
*pudgalanairātmya*, 100.  
*puññābhisaṅkhāra*, 79.  
*porānā*, 51.  
*pradhāna*, 136, 137.  
*prapañca*. 124-128, 137, 138.  
*prapañcopasama*, 124-128,  
 132, 135.  
*prāḷhā*, 130, 131.  
*phassa*. 3, 5, 7, 8, 19, 70, 74,  
 77, 98, 132.  
*brahman*, 136.  
*brahmā*, 13, 48, 55, 56, 66.  
*bhava* 13, 75, 96, 132, 135.  
*bhavanirodha*, 57, 135.  
*bhavasota*, 83.  
*bhāvanā*, 62-126.  
*maccu*, 81, 102.  
*maññanā*. 30-32, 51, 52, 67.  
*maññita*, 13, 16, 19, 108.  
*manomaya*, 22.  
*mantā*, 32.  
*mamatta*, 11.  
*mahāpurisavitakka*, 1, 36.  
*mahābhūta*, 61, 77.  
*māgadhi*, 45.  
*mātrā*, 128, 130.  
*māna*, 8-12, 14, 20, 34, 36-38,  
 50, 52, 90, 117-119, 121, 122,  
 130, 132.  
*māyā*, 7.  
*māra*, 13-15, 32.  
*micchādīḷhi*. 38.  
*muni* 33, 35, 36, 37, 54, 57,  
 59, 98, 135.

*mona*, 36.  
*moha*, 33  
*yathābhūtaṃ*, 62, 82 .  
*rāga*, 8, 54, 72, 122.  
*rūpa*, 5, 7, 64, 77, 93, 131, 133.  
*rūpa (loka)*, 59, 77, 131, 133.  
*vaya*, 83, 35.  
*vikalpa*, 27, 124, 125.  
*vicāra*, 4, 25, 28.  
*viññāna*, 3, 5, 7, 8, 50, 55, 61,  
 66, 67, 74, 75, 76, 79, 87, 125.  
*viññāṇatthiti*. 58.  
*vitakka*, 3, 22-24, 26, 27, 36,  
 133.  
*vitakkavicāra*, 3, 4, 25, 28.  
*vipañcanā*. 4.  
*vipañcitanū*, 4.  
*vipassanā*, 85.  
*vibhava*, 132.  
*vimokkha*, 56, 69, 70.  
*virāga*, 54, 69.  
*vivāda*, 36, 132, 135.  
*visaṅkhāragataṃ*, 79.  
*vedanā*, 3, 5, 7, 74, 77, 93,  
 109.  
*vohāra*, 37, 84, 126.  
*vaiśvānara*, 128, 129.  
*saṅ sāra*, 38, 72, 75, 111, 122.  
*sakka*, 14, 23.  
*sakkāyadiḷhi*, 11, 22.  
*saṅkhata*. 16, 68, 71.  
*saṅkhā*. 5, 84, 93, 114, 120,  
 139, 140, 142.  
*saṅkhārā*, 3, 7, 68, 73, 75, 73-76,  
 78, 79, 93, 118, 125.  
*sacca*. 45, 63, 112  
*saññā*, 3, 5, 7, 13, 17, 19, 21,  
 30, 57, 70, 71, 77, 93, 108,  
 125, 133, 141.

*saññā vedayitanirodhasamā-*  
*patti*, 30, 31, 63, 70.  
*samaññā*, 5, 37, 46, 84, 93,  
 127.  
*samādhi*, 55, 57, 58, 69, 70.  
*sammādiḷhi*, 38- 42, 45, 77,  
 85, 96.  
*sammuti*. 42, 43.

*saraṇapaṭipadā*, 47.  
*sukha*, 59, 99, 132.  
*suñña*, 81, 88, 97, 98, 101,  
 102.  
*suññatāvimokkha.*, 56, 70.  
*suññatā*, 70, 89, 93, 101, 102.  
*suṣuptasthāna*, 128-130.  
*svapnasthāna*, 128, 129.

## GENERAL INDEX

(Titles of suttas are shown in italics.)

### A

Arahant, 13, 27, 29, 36, 49, 50,  
 55-59, 63, 66, 68, 69,  
 70, 77, 78, 91.  
 Arising, 58, 68, 74, 83, 85,  
 109.  
 Attachment, 9, 37-39, 41, 54,  
 72, 73, 76, 79, 97, 102.  
*Aṭṭhakanāgara S.*, 72.  
 Avarice, 34, 107  
 Ānanda, 6, 9, 57, 73, 75, 77, 87-  
 89, 98

### B

*Bāhiya S.*, 28, 29, 36, 59,  
 60.  
 Becoming, 8, 9, 48, 58, 74, 75,  
 83, 89.  
*Bhaddiya Theragathā*, 58.  
 Birth, 8, 18, 32, 74, 86, 113.  
 Bondage, 33, 35, 48  
 Bodhivagga, 28

Absolute, 54, 92, 101.

– entity, 126.

– existence, 73, 84.

– mind, 125.

– truth, 42, 43, 124.

– voidness, 92, 114.

*Aggivaḥogotta S.*, 108-110.

Aggregates, 7, 8, 10, 11, 30, 71,  
 72, 77, 100, 107, 109, 110,  
 112, 113, 125.

Agnosticism, 103, 104.

Air, 48, 53, 56, 60-62, 65, 68,  
 69, 76

*Alagaddūpama S.*, 38-42, 54,  
 94.

*Anattalakkhaṇa S.*, 98.

*Anurādha S.*, 111, 112.

*Anaṅgana S.*, 43.

*Āneñjasappāya S.*, 72, 73.

Annihilation, 42, 112-114,  
 134, 135.

*Apaṇṇaka S.*, 81.

*Brahmajāla S.*, 38.  
*Brahmanimantanika S.*, 66.  
 Buddha, 2, 7-10, 12-14, 17, 21,  
 23, 28-30, 33, 36-38, 42-  
 53, 55, 57-66, 69-71, 76-80,  
 82, 86-92, 94-98, 102-112,  
 114, 115, 124, 134.  
*Buddhaghosa*, 7, 12, 43-45,  
 51-53, 65-67, 119, 120, 134,  
 139.  
 Buddhism, 1, 13, 14, 28, 32, 81,  
 91, 97, 102, 105, 114

## C

Cankers, 31, 48, 78, 89, 93,  
 122.  
 Category-mistake, 109.  
 Cessation, 17, 28, 42, 58, 63, 71,  
 78, 85, 87.  
 - of becoming, 57-58.  
 - of concepts, 25, 105, 106.  
 - of consciousness, 60-63,  
 74.  
 - of perception, 27, 30, 31,  
 36, 70, 71, 85, 105.  
 - of prolific conceptualisa-  
 tion, 20, 21, 24, 36, 55.  
 - of suffering, 103, 112,  
 113.  
 - of views, 18, 38, 42  
 - of the world, 80, 105.  
 Clinging, 10, 36, 37, 40, 42, 46,  
 54, 76, 83, 100, 106, 113.  
 Cognition, 3, 6, 10, 12, 100.  
 Compassion, 40, 104, 107.  
 Compounded, 70, 71.  
 Comprehension, 4, 40, 50, 51

Conation, 68, 77, 100.  
 Concentration, 55, 62, 69, 88, 89.  
 Conceit, 10-12, 15, 23, 36, 37,  
 51-53, 118-120, 122, 130,  
 131.  
 Concept, 4-14, 30, 38, 42, 43,  
 47-50, 52, 54, 64, 67, 69, 75,  
 78, 80, 83, 85, 89-93, 95, 97,  
 110, 113, 124-132, 137, 139,  
 140.  
 - attachment to, 38, 50, 54,  
 72, 73.  
 - bondage of, 14, 23.  
 - characterised by prolific  
 tendency, 5, 6, 11, 18, 21,  
 23-25, 33, 131, 133.  
 - crystallization of, 78-79.  
 - elimination of, 26.  
 - emptiness of, 82, 105.  
 - of an ego, 10, 58, 99.  
 - pragmatic value of, 36,  
 40, 96, 105.  
 - world of, 58, 63, 69, 80.  
 Conceptualisation, 11, 16, 20,  
 21, 23, 55, 85, 130.  
 Conditionality 83-85, 113.  
 Conflict, 2, 13, 105, 131, 133,  
 135.  
 Consciousness 3, 5, 7, 8, 11, 20,  
 22, 26, 30, 34, 48, 50, 54, 62,  
 67, 68, 73-77, 98, 99, 109,  
 110, 125, 129, 131, 132, 140,  
 141.  
 - and name-and - form, 74, 77.  
 - non-manifestative, 61- 64,  
 66, 78, 79.  
 - of the arahants, 55-58, 60-  
 64, 66, 69, 70.

- unestablished, 79, 86, 87.  
 Contact, 20, 74, 81.  
 Contemplation, 64, 66, 91.  
 Contention, 91  
 Conventions, 42, 43, 77.  
 Craving, 8-13, 18, 23, 33, 36,  
 41, 51, 64, 74, 76, 108, 111,  
 117-120, 122, 140.  
*Cūḷa Mālunḅya S.*, 103.  
*Cūḷa Sīhanāda S.*, 1.  
*Cūḷa Suññata S.*, 87, 92, 101,  
 106.  
*Cūḷa Vedalla S.*, 3, 70.

## D

Dandapāni, 14.  
 Darkness, 53.  
 Death, 18, 19, 22, 32, 80, 87,  
 101, 102, 107, 112, 125.  
 Deathless, 68, 72.  
 Debate, 36, 112, 127.  
 Deconceptualisation, 26, 55,  
 85.  
 Defilements, 120-122.  
 Deliverance, 56, 69, 70, 92.  
 Delusion, 19, 34, 71, 108, 111,  
 122.  
 Dependent Arising, 5, 8, 80,  
 83, 85, 109, 113, 114.  
*Descartes*, 32.  
 Designation, 5, 74-77, 84, 93,  
 109.  
 Desire, 23, 31, 129, 130,  
 132.  
 Despair, 8, 18, 74.  
 Detachment 20, 54, 60, 70,  
 72, 85, 91, 96, 103, 107.  
 Dhamma, 9, 34, 41, 43, 47,

50, 52, 54, 59, 94, 112.  
*Dhammapāla*, 59, 121, 123.  
 Dialect, 43-47.  
 Dialectic, 41, 47, 53, 89, 96,  
 102, 104, 124, 126.  
 Dichotomy, 16, 29, 65, 79, 80,  
 82, 86.  
*Dīghanakha S.*, 90-91.  
 Disciple, 17-19, 41, 47, 62, 73.  
 Discursive thought, 3  
 Dispassion, 17, 41, 42.  
 Dispute, 23, 33, 36, 37, 91,  
 106, 132, 135.  
 Disillusionment, 42.  
 Dogma, 37-38, 47, 52, 91,  
 100.  
 Duality, 10.  
*Dvayatānupassanā S.*, 1, 30.

## E

Earth, 48-51, 53, 56, 61, 62, 65,  
 68, 76  
 Earth element, 65, 88.  
 Ego, 10-12, 30, 32, 37, 38,  
 50, 58, 98, 99, 110, 113,  
 114, 126, 135, 137.  
 Egotism, 73, 114.  
 Elements, 43, 63, 65, 66, 68,  
 71, 77, 100, 109.  
 Emancipated-sage, 36, 41, 52,  
 58, 60, 107.  
 - monk, 108.  
 - One, 36, 102, 125.  
 - mind, 70, 78.  
 Emancipation, 28, 78, 135.  
 Empirical-approach, 87.  
 - consciousness, 30, 81.  
 Emptiness, 82, 88, 92.  
 Enlightenment, 17.

Equanimity, 25.  
Eternalism, 41, 73, 92, 102, 114.  
Ethics, 14, 22, 28, 79, 81, 95, 103, 105, 116, 121, 123, 139.  
Existence, 13, 32, 55, 73, 83, 84, 85, 108, 115, 132, 135.  
Experience, 81, 90, 96, 98, 100, 105-107.  
– of voidness, 87, 92, 93, 101, 105.  
Extinction, 101, 111.  
Extremes, 47, 83, 84-86.

## F

Fabrication, 51, 78.  
Falsehood, 43, 46, 82, 91.  
Feeling, 3, 5, 7, 10, 31, 70, 74, 77, 99, 109, 110, 122, 140.  
Fire, 107-111, 114, 115.  
Flux, 58, 84.  
Form, 54, 61, 64, 71, 132, 133.  
Footing, 48, 53, 56, 59, 61.  
Formless, 54, 59, 64, 69, 71, 79, 84, 133.  
Freedom, 23, 36, 89, 91.  
Fruit-of-Knowledge, 55, 58, 63, 68, 132.

## G

*Geiger, W.*, 45.  
Goal, 29, 40-42, 47, 59, 89, 95, 96, 105.  
God, 6, 13, 14, 23, 55, 61, 76, 79, 136.

Grammar, 6, 29, 50, 61.  
Grasping, 8, 19, 32, 37, 38, 51, 54, 72, 74, 78, 83, 94, 96, 106, 110.

## H

Happiness, 25, 60, 105-107.  
*Hare, E. M.*, 139.  
Hatred, 33.  
Heretics, 36, 53, 111, 115.  
*Hīnayāna*, 95, 100.  
*Horner, I. B.*, 45, 140.

## I

Idealism, 81, 124, 126.  
Ideation, 4, 6, 14, 16, 21, 84.  
Identification, 30, 31, 34, 112.  
Identity, 84, 110.  
Ignorance, 8, 60, 75, 78, 83, 104, 117.  
Ill, 18, 22, 29, 54.  
Illusion, 7, 10, 29, 32, 33, 37, 58, 68, 100.  
Illustration, 8, 9, 19, 62, 63, 132.  
Imagination, 4, 15, 19, 30, 49-52, 108.  
Imagining, 15, 18, 30, 50, 51, 67  
Immediacy, 55.  
Impermanence, 33, 58, 72, 99.  
Impingement, 70  
Inclinations, 79.  
Indeterminates, 16, 103, 104, 107.  
Individual, 34-35, 47, 52, 65,

71, 78, 134.  
Infinite, 64, 66, 102.  
– regress, 90, 92.  
Infinity, 56, 88.  
Insight, 32, 47, 58, 64, 83, 85, 97, 103.  
Intellect, 4, 89, 95, 96, 107.  
Interdependence, 73, 75, 76.  
Introspection, 32, 89, 92.

## J

Jealousy, 34.

## K

*Kaccāyana S.*, 82, 83, 86.  
*Kakacūpama S.*, 62.  
*Kalahavivāda S.*, 1, 23, 34, 35, 36, 131-135, 141.  
*Kālakārāma S.*, 32.  
*Keith, A. B.*, 53, 103, 114.  
*Kevaḍḍha S.*, 60, 67.  
*Khema S.*, 72.  
Knowledge, 17, 32, 48-52, 58, 75, 83, 89, 97, 102, 105, 130, 135.  
– Fruit of, 55, 58, 62, 69, 132.  
*Kutūhalasālā S.*, 16, 110, 111

## L

Lamentation, 8, 74, 132.  
Language, 3, 5-7, 10, 40, 43-46, 50, 52, 105, 108, 126.  
Latency, 78.  
Liberation, 73.  
Linguistic  
– convention, 5, 6, 19, 109,

111, 126.  
– relations, 124.  
– symbol, 78, 113.  
Logic, 6, 40, 96, 97, 107, 116, 126.  
Lotus, 106, 107, 126.  
Lust, 27, 33.  
Lustre, 59, 61, 66, 67.  
Lustrous  
– all-round, 66.  
– mind, 62.  
– Ones, 66.

## M

*Madhupiṇḍika S.*, 1-14, 24, 28, 34, 35, 36, 47, 80, 118, 139, 140.  
*Mahā Hatthipadopama S.*, 65.  
*Mahā Nidāna S.*, 75, 77.  
*Mahā padāna S.*, 74.  
*Mahāpurisavitakka S.*, 2.  
*Mahāsaccaka S.*, 63.  
*Mahāvedalla S.*, 50.  
Mahā Kaccāna, 8, 9, 10, 13.  
Mahā Kotthita, 19, 20.  
*Mahā Vīyūha S.*, 36.  
*Mādhyamika*, 91, 92, 95, 97, 99-101, 103, 124.  
*Māgandiya S.*, 96, 97.  
Māra, 15.  
*Māluṅkyaputta*, 104.  
Manifoldness, 4, 136-139.  
Materialism, 79.  
Matter, 65-66, 77-80.  
Meditation, 57.  
Metaphysics, 21, 79, 95, 126.  
*Milinda*, 118.  
Mind, 3, 5, 9, 13, 15, 21, 22, 26, 28, 34-38, 41, 52-58, 60, 63, 64, 68-70, 72, 76, 78-81, 83,

85-89, 92, 93, 97, 98, 100,  
107, 126, 131, 133.  
- luminous, 62, 122, 125,  
126.  
Mindfulness, 2, 33, 100-  
102, 106.  
Middle Path, 82, 85, 96, 124.  
Monk, 5, 9, 12, 13, 17, 18, 22,  
23, 27, 28, 31, 36, 39, 40-50,  
52, 53, 55.  
Multiplicity, 137, 139.  
Murthi, T. R. V., 91, 92.  
*Mūlapariyāya S.*, 47-54, 66.

## N

Name, 45, 65, 77, 81, 82, 84, 94.  
- and-form, 33, 60-63, 65,  
73-77, 132, 133.  
*Nāgasena*, 118-119.  
*Nānamoli Thera*, 140.  
*Nānaponika Mahāthera*, 53.  
Neither-perception-nor-non  
perception, 31, 48, 56, 68,  
71, 79, 85, 88.  
net, 64.  
network, 7, 50, 74.  
*Neumann, K. E.*, 139, 140.  
Nibbāna, 17, 23, 32, 38, 40,  
42, 49-50, 53, 55, 57, 59, 66-  
68, 71, 72, 86, 97, 101-105,  
111, 113, 121.  
Niddesa, 33.  
Nihilism, 114.  
Non-ego, 10.  
Non-existence, 83, 85,  
102, 108, 132.  
Non-identification, 30, 31.  
Non-manifestative conscious-  
ness, 60-63, 78, 133.  
Non-Proliferation, 23, 36.  
Non-Returner, 72.

Non-substantiality, 83.  
Not  
- become, 68.  
- born, 68.  
- compounded, 68.  
- made, 68.  
- self, 54, 72, 80, 85.  
Nothingness, 48, 56, 68, 88.  
Nutriments, 56.  
*Nyānātiloka Mahāthera*,  
139.

## O

Objectivity, 6, 30.  
Obsession, 24, 138-140, 142.  
*Oldenberg, H.*, 44.  
Once-Returner, 95, 119.  
Oneness, 88, 89, 139, 140.  
Ontology, 136, 139.

## P

*Pañcattaya S.*, 71.  
*Pande, G. C.*, 141.  
Pantheism, 137.  
Parable,  
- of Vepacitti, 14-16.  
- of Raft, 38, 39, 40, 41, 47,  
72.  
- of Water-Snake, 94.  
- of Arrow, 104.  
Paradox, 10, 41, 64, 69,  
83, 95, 106, 132, 136.  
Parlance, 43, 46.  
Path,  
- Ariyan, 52, 139.  
- Middle, 82-85, 96, 102.  
- to purity, 54.  
- to non-proliferation, 23-  
35.

- peaceful, 47.  
- war-like, 47.  
*Paṭhavikasina Niddesa*, 4  
Peace, 32, 106.  
Percept, 6, 30, 36, 74, 78.  
Perception, 5, 7, 8, 30, 57, 58, 64,  
65, 70, 71, 77, 80, 88, 99,  
109, 110, 118, 120, 122,  
125, 131, 133, 134, 140, 141.  
Perfected One, 16, 48, 49, 102,  
107.  
Perfection, 48, 106.  
Perversion, 94  
Phenomena, 6, 28, 32, 48, 52,  
81, 83, 85, 112, 126.  
Phenomenal-world, 69, 80,  
136.  
Philosophy, 1, 4, 6, 14, 28-30,  
103, 105, 106, 116, 121,  
124, 125, 134, 141.  
Phonetic Symbolism, 128-130,  
135.  
Plurality, 124, 137, 139, 140.  
*Ponḥapāda S.*, 26, 71,  
102, 105.  
Pragmatism, 36, 40, 41, 81,  
96, 97, 102, 103-105, 124.  
Proclivities, 9, 13, 30, 38,  
47, 87.  
Preparations, 7, 68, 83, 93, 99,  
94, 108, 118, 125.  
Proliferating Tendency, 7, 21, 24,  
25.  
Prolific Tendency, 6, 9, 16, 22,  
23, 33.  
Proliferation, 4-6, 9, 13, 14,  
15, 18-24, 28, 36, 55, 78,  
126, 139.  
Prolific Conceptualisation, 22,  
23, 55.  
Prolificity, 4, 6, 11, 16, 19,  
22, 23, 33, 108, 118, 141.

Psychology, 2, 11, 14, 16,  
21, 75, 95, 99, 116,  
121, 126.  
Purity, 38, 45, 54, 97, 106,  
135-136.

## Q

Quadrilemma, 16, 17, 19, 20,  
111, 112.  
Quarrel, 34.  
Quietude, 102, 103.

## R

Radiance, 59, 60, 64.  
Rapture, 26.  
*Rathavinīta S.*, 97.  
Ratiocination, 23, 25, 122.  
Reality, 30, 78, 91, 112, 125,  
126, 136.  
Realm, 60, 121, 125, 138, 141.  
- formless, 54, 60, 64, 68,  
71, 79, 84, 133.  
- of form (fine material),  
54, 60, 64, 71.  
- of infinite consciousness,  
48, 56, 88.  
- of infinite space, 48, 56,  
89.  
- of neither-perception-nor  
-non perception, 31, 48,  
56, 79, 85, 88.  
- of nothingness, 48, 56,  
88.  
- sensuous, 64, 79.  
Reasoning, 3, 5, 8, 24.  
Rebirth, 56, 59, 76, 78, 110,  
113.

Reckoning, 5, 22, 76, 110, 140, 141.  
 Refuge, 76, 133.  
 Regress (regression), 90, 92.  
 Release, 10, 32, 73, 79.  
 Relativity, 36, 81, 90, 96  
 Renunciation, 22, 71, 73.  
*Rhys Davids, T. W.*, 44, 75, 139.  
*Rhys Davids, C. A. F.*, 75, 139, 140.

## S

*Sabhiya S.*, 33-35  
 Sage, 31, 32, 37, 41, 64, 76, 106, 107, 116, 126, 135.  
 Sakka, 14, 23.  
*Sakkapañha S.*, 1, 23-25, 34, 35, 36.  
*Samiddhi S.*, 81.  
*Sammādirīhi S.*, 77.  
*Sandaka Ś.*, 78.  
*Sappurisa S.*, 30-31.  
*Sarathchandra, E. R.*, 12, 34-36, 130, 141.  
*Sārānīya Vagga*, 22.  
 Sāriputta, 19-22, 57, 58, 91, 97, 112.  
*Sāriputta Theragāthā*, 58.  
 Self, 22, 37, 41, 53, 70, 85, 99, 101, 128, 136, 137.  
 - indulgence, 79.  
 - mortification, 79.  
 Sense(s), 81, 98, 100-102, 106, 107, 121, 131, 137  
 - control, 28.  
 - data, 29- 31, 81, 98, 100-102, 106, 107, 121, 131, 137..  
 - desire, 53, 75, 93, 94, 107.  
 - experience, 28, 29, 32, 36, 50, 55, 58, 63, 98.  
 - impression, 29, 51, 77,

132, 133.  
 - perception, 2-11, 13, 21, 22, 24, 34, 28, 50, 71, 108, 118, 139, 141.  
 - pleasures, 13, 54, 71, 89, 95.  
 - reaction, 77, 133.  
 - restraint, 28, 29, 30.  
 - spheres, 74-89.  
 Sensed, 29, 48, 56.  
 Sensory Impingement, 3, 5, 8.  
 Signless, 56, 70, 89.  
 Silence 36, 41, 103.

## Similes :

- **archer**, 72-73.  
 - **arrow**, 104.  
 - **bondage**, 14-16.  
 - **bubble**, 7.  
 - **carpenter**, 25-26.  
 - **conjuror's trick**, 7.  
 - **creeper**, 73.  
 - **currents**, 75, 76, 133.  
 - **ferment**, 78.  
 - **fire**, 107-110, 114-115.  
 - **foam**, 7.  
 - **honey-ball**, 9.  
 - **limbless man**, 78.  
 - **lotus**, 106, 107, 116, 126.  
 - **milk etc.**, 84.  
 - **mirage**, 7.  
 - **ocean**, 109.  
 - **painter**, 78.  
 - **pendulum**, 86.  
 - **pig**, 134.  
 - **plantain-tree**, 7.  
 - **potter**, 78.  
 - **raft**, 38-41.  
 - **relay-chariots**, 97.  
 - **resurrected tiger**, 6.  
 - **slough of snake**, 27.  
 - **splinterfire**, 58.  
 - **stars and moon**, 59.  
 - **two bundles of reeds**, 74.

- **vortex (whirl-pool)**, 75, 76.  
 - **water-snake**, 94.

Soul, 32, 37, 79, 102, 105, 113, 114, 126, 134, 136.  
 Speculation, 7, 17, 19, 21, 1, 135.  
 Stream-winner, 95.  
*Subha S.*, 71.  
 Substantiality 6, 59, 100.  
 Suffering, 8, 17, 33, 68, 73, 74, 80, 87, 91, 103, 110, 125.  
 Symbol, 6, 43, 54, 78, 113.  
 Synergies, 85, 118.

## T

Taints, 62, 121, 125.  
*Tathāgata*, 18, 41, 49, 50, 55, 58, 84, 107, 109, 113, 115, 124, 125.  
 Tautology, 34  
 Tendency, 5, 6, 7, 14, 16, 21, 22, 24, 27, 33, 36, 38, 42, 50, 85, 92.  
 Terminology, 1, 42, 75, 80, 121.  
 Theory, 10, 13, 16, 38-40, 42, 89, 92, 94, 100, 105, 116.  
*Theravāda*, 124.  
 Thought, 14, 27, 50, 81, 84, 89, 118, 121, 134, 139-141.  
 - activity, 16, 19.  
 - applied and sustained, 25  
 - constructions, 87, 124, 125.  
 - discursive, 3.  
 - extension in, 11.  
 - initial, 3, 4.  
 - of a great man, 2, 36.  
 - regression in, 92.  
 Tranquility, 86, 103, 107.

Transcendence, 28, 29, 52, 54, 55, 77, 81, 90, 102, 105, 106, 133.  
 Transcendental, 19, 21, 52.  
 - consciousness, 56, 60.  
 - experience, 54.  
 - states, 122.  
 - vision, 70.  
 Transience, 85.  
 Truth, 40-43, 58, 64, 81, 89, 104, 112, 124, 125.  
*Tuvāṭaka S.*, 32.

## U

Uncompounded- element, 68.  
 Unestablished - consciousness, 79, 86.  
 Unity, 48, 137, 139.  
 Universality, 48.  
 Upanisadic soul tradition, 53.  
*Uraga S.*, 27.

## V

Vedas, 46, 63.  
*Vedānta*, 141.  
*Vepacitti S.*, 14-16, 30.  
 Views, 7, 9, 11-13, 17, 23, 35-38, 51, 62, 75, 79, 83, 84, 90, 95, 96, 97, 102, 107, 116, 117-123, 135, 140, 142.  
 - cessation of, 18, 19, 91  
 - false, 41, 43.  
 - networks of, 7.  
 - right, 38-42, 47, 85.  
 - speculative, 17, 19, 135.  
*Vijñānavāda*, 124, 125.  
 Vision, 41, 62, 64, 70, 80.

*Vitakkasanthāna S.*, 26.  
 Void, 56, 70, 81, 87, 92, 98,  
 100, 101, 105, 106.  
 Voidness, 70, 89, 92-94, 101,  
 102, 105.  
 - absolute, 92, 101.  
 Vortex, 75, 77.

58-62, 64, 70, 72, 75, 77,  
 83, 105-107, 125.  
 World, 8, 13, 14, 17, 22, 32,  
 34, 36, 38, 41, 54, 55,  
 58, 63, 68-70, 76, 79-83, 98,  
 102, 105, 106, 107,  
 130, 131, 136, 137, 139.  
 Worldling, 4, 6, 9, 10, 22, 24,  
 33, 38, 52, 55, 64, 75,

## W

Water, 39, 48, 49, 53, 56, 57, 59,  
 61, 62, 65, 68, 76.  
 Whirlpool, 76.  
 Wind, 59.  
 Wisdom, 9, 26, 31-33, 37, 50,

## Y

*Yamaka S.*, 112.

## By the same author

- \* 1. Uttaritara Hudekalawa - Damsak No. 172/173 - (1990)  
 -do- (New edition) D.G.M.B. - (2001)
2. Vidasun Upades - (1996)
3. Nivane Niveema - Volume I (1997)
4. Nivane Niveema - Volume II (1998)
5. Nivane Niveema - Volume III (1998)
6. Nivane Niveema - Volume IV (1998)
7. Nivane Niveema - Volume V (1999)
8. Nivane Niveema - Volume VI (1999)
9. Nivane Niveema - Volume VII (1999)
10. Nivane Niveema - Volume VIII (2000)
11. Nivane Niveema - Volume IX (2001)
12. Nivane Niveema - Volume X (2002)
13. Nivane Niveema - Volume X1 (2004)
14. Nivane Niveema - Library Edition (1-6 Volumes) (2000)
15. Nivane Niveema - Library Edition (All 11 Volumes) (2010)
16. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. I - (1999)
17. Hithaka Mahima - I (1999)
18. Hita Thanima - (2000)
19. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. II - (2000)
20. Pavatma Hā Navatma - (2000)
21. Athi Hati Dakma - (2001)
22. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. III - (2001)
23. Divi Katare Sanda Andura - (2001)
24. Kaya Anuwa Giya Sihanā - (2001)
25. Mā-Piya Uvatana - (2002)
26. Prathipatti Pājāwa - (2003)
27. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. IV - (2003)
28. Abinikmana - (2003)
29. Hitaka Mahima II - (2003)
30. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. V - (2005)
31. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. VI - (2006)
32. Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshanā Vol. VII - (2009)
33. Budu Samaya Pudgalaya ha Samajaya (2009)
34. Manase Mayawa (2010)
35. Bhavana Margaya (2011)
36. Sasun Pilivetha (2011)
37. Pilivethin Pilivetheta (2011)
- \*1. Concept and Reality in Early Buddhist Thought - (1971)
- \*2. Samyutta Nikaya - An Anthology, Part II - Wheel No, 183/185 - (1972)  
 - do - D. G. M. B. Edition (2009)
- \*3. Ideal Solitude - Wheel No, 188 - (1973)  
 - do - D.G.M.B. Edition - (2010)
- \*4. The Magic of the Mind - (1974)  
 - do - D. G. M. B. Edition - (2007)
5. Towards Calm and Insight - (1991)  
 - do - D. G. M. B. Edition - (1998)
6. From Topsy - turvydom to Wisdom - Volume 1 - (2003)
7. Seeing Through (1999)
8. Towards A Better World (2000)
9. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume I - (2003)
10. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume II - (2005)
11. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume III - (2005)
12. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume IV - (2006)
13. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume V - (2007)
14. Nibbana - The Mind Stilled - Volume VI - (2010)
15. Nibbana and The Fire Simile (2010)
- \* Buddhist Publication Society, P.O. Box, 61, Kandy  
 බෞද්ධ ශ්‍රී ලංකා ප්‍රකාශන සමිතිය, නැ.පෙ. 61, මහනුවර

Books Published by D.G.M.B.			No. of Copies
01.	Nivane Niveema	Volume One	11000
02.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Two	8000
03.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Three	5000
04.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Four	8000
05.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Five	5000
06.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Six	3500
07.	Nivane Niveema(Lib Ed)	Part One (1-6 Volumes)	500
08.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Seven	3000
09.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Eight	3000
10.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Nine	5000
11.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Ten	5000
12.	Nivane Niveema	Volume Eleven	3000
13.	Nivane Niveema(Lib Ed)	Part One (1-11 Volume)	2500
14.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume One	13000
15.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Two	12000
16.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Three	10000
17.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Four	11000
18.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Five	10000
19.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Six	8000
20.	Pahan Kanuwa Dharma Deshana	Volume Seven	4000
21.	Hitaka Mahima	Volume One	10000
22.	Hitaka Mahima	Volume Two	7000
23.	Uttareetara Hudekalawa		12000
24.	Vidasun Upades		8000
25.	Chalana Chitraya		7000
26.	Diya Suliya		11000
27.	Manase Mayawa		4000
28.	Bhawana Margaya		14000
29.	Towards A Better World		6000
30.	Seeing Through		3000
31.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume I	5000
32.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume II	3000
33.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume III	3000
34.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume IV	5000
35.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume V	2000
36.	Nibbana - The Mind Stilled	Volume VI	2000
37.	The Magic of the Mind		2000
38.	Towards Calm and Insight		2000
39.	Samyutta Nikaya An Anthology		2000
40.	Ideal Solitude		2000
41.	Nibbana and The Fire Simile		5000

All enquiries regarding participation in the Dhammadana should be addressed to:

**Mr.G.T.Bandara**

The Settlor, D.G.M.B.

Royal Institute. 191, Havelock Rd, Colombo 05.